



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



124.22.12.10

Bot. Feb. 1896



Harvard College Library.

FROM

.....The Author.....

.....31 Oct. 1895.....









Harvard

REPRINT.

STUDIES AND NOTES  
IN  
PHILOLOGY AND LITERATURE

---

VOL. II.

---

PUBLISHED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE  
MODERN LANGUAGE DEPARTMENTS OF HARVARD UNIVERSITY

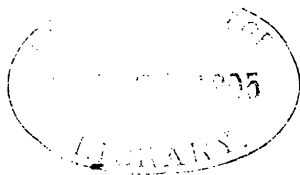
By GINN & COMPANY, TREMONT PLACE, BOSTON

1893



12422.12.10

719-1<sup>3</sup>



The Anchor.

John Matthews Moanly

OBSERVATIONS ON THE LANGUAGE OF CHAUCER'S  
LEGEND OF GOOD WOMEN.

THE following paper is part of a dissertation prepared at Harvard University in 1890 for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy. Its present form is closely modelled on that of a similar study of the *Troilus*, by Professor Kittredge, which is now in press for the Chaucer Society. When that study appears, the paper here published will be found to owe to it not only its general arrangement and the numbering of its paragraphs, but even the language in which the observed facts are stated. The only deviations are due either to real or apparent differences in the language of the two poems or to oversight. Words are sometimes assigned to sections to which they would not have been assigned but for the sake of conformity to the *Troilus* study ; and care has been taken, whenever the usage of the *Legend* made it absolutely necessary to put a word in a different section from the one it occupies in the *Troilus* study, to supply a cross-reference. It is hoped that the value of both studies will be increased by their identity of form.

In giving for many words forms from Old and Middle English, no attempt has been made to determine the dialect of Old English from which descent is to be traced, or to furnish a history of the changes in form which occurred between the Old English period and the time of Chaucer. The chief purpose has been to account, so far as possible, for Chaucer's treatment of final *-e*.

The present study is based on only one manuscript, — that preserved in the Cambridge University Library and marked Gg. 4. 27 ; but in almost if not quite all important instances of divergence from the general agreement of the other manuscripts, the readings of all the texts (including Thynne's) printed by the Chaucer Society are given.

To Professor Child, who suggested the subject of my dissertation, and to Professor Kittredge, my debt to whom appears on every page, more thanks are due than I can express.

## NOUNS.

§ 1. Masculine, feminine, and neuter nouns of the *n*-declension in Anglo-Saxon end in *-e* in *L.G.W.*

§ 2. I. Masculine nouns of the *n*-declension (Child, § 3).

bane (A.S. bana, bona, L<sup>a</sup>. bone, L<sup>b</sup>. bane), 2159 f, 2180 f, 2461 f, 2659; ban, 2147 f.

Rhyme word. — Adryane.

beleue (cf. A.S. geléafa, L<sup>a</sup>. ilæfe, L<sup>b</sup>. bilefue, bileue, O. læfe), 2109 f (: leue *inf.*).

bere (A.S. bera), 1214 f (: spere *n.*).

bowe (A.S. boga, L. boje, bowe), 972, 991.

drake (A.S. draca, L., O. drake), 2450.

drynk (A.S. drynca, but also drinc, *m.* (and drenc, *m.*), *i*-stem; L<sup>a</sup>. drinc (drænc, drench), L<sup>b</sup>. drinke, dringke, dringe (drinch), O. drinn, drinnke (drinnch)), 2040 f (: swynk *inf.*; swynke, Fx. Tn. Tr. Th. B. Ag.); 2355 (+ vowel). In both passages most of the MSS. spell *drynk* with a final *e*.

fere (A.S. geféra, L. iuere, O. fere), 969; cf. also § 14.

husbonde (A.S. húsbónda (from O. N. húsbóndi); when first introduced into English the *o* of *-bonda* was probably long, but such forms as *husbunda*, *-banda*, *Chron.* 1048, indicate that it was shortened before the close of the A.S. period; L<sup>a</sup>. husbonde, L<sup>b</sup>. hosebonde), 1727, 1828, 2656; -de, 1641, 1715, 1738; 2263 is unmetrical in C., a comparison of all the MSS. shows that Chaucer wrote: But to hire husbonde gan she for to preye. In 501 either the final *-e* is sounded, or the first foot lacks a syllable; all the MSS. agree. The loss of final *-e* in this word may be due partly to accent and partly to popular etymology.

knaue (A.S. cnapa, cnafa, L. cnaue, O. cnape), 2390 f (: haue *inf.*); knau, 2366, 2371; knawe, 1807 f (: sawe 3 *s. pr.* S. = saue).

make (A.S. gemaca, O. make), 129 f (: sake *n.*).

mone (A.S. móna, L., O. mone), 1972 f, 2194 f, 2638 f; monë, 825, 2503; mone, 1163, 2504; monë, 812.

Rhyme word. — sone *adv.*

name (A.S. nama, noma, L. name, nome, O. name), 301 f, 404 f, 588 f, 1812 f, 2068 f, 2135 f, 2389 f, 2587 f; namē, 179, 1381, 1811, 2237; name, 1361, 2569.

Rhyme words. — blame *inf.* (2135), shame *n.* (the rest).

pope (A.S. pápa, L<sup>a</sup>. pape, L<sup>b</sup>. pope), 415.

prophete (A.S. proféta, O. profete, prophete), see § 21.

stedē (A.S. stéda, stóda, L. stede), 1115.

stere (A.S. stéora, *gubernator*; stéor *n.*, O. ster, *gubernaculum*), 2416 f (: manere *n.*).

Note. — Possibly it would have been better to put this word under § 14, as coming from *stéor*; but the history of the word seems to show at least that *stéora* so greatly influenced its form as really to determine it. A confusion between the two words may easily have arisen from the use of *stéora* figuratively, assisted perhaps by such passages as Basil, *Admn.* 6, and *Bt.*, 35, 3 (quoted by B.-T., s. v.). At any rate, *stere* seems always to have final *-e* in Chaucer; cf. the passages cited by B.-T. and B.-S. It may be noted in passing that B.-S. is wrong in giving the form *sterless* (Ch. C. T., B. 439): all the MSS. except P. and L. have *stere* (*steere*), which the metre requires.

tyme (A.S. tíma, L., O. time, L<sup>b</sup>. tyme), 997 f, 1552 f; tymē, 364, 733, 749, 795, 1349, 2444, 2617; tyme, 36, 184, 442, 537, 739, 1403, 1951, 2341, 2589, 2607; tyme, 583, 772, 2602.

wel[ē] (A.S. wela, L<sup>a</sup>. weolla, weole, L<sup>b</sup>. wele), 687, 689, 1235.

welle (A.S. wella; but also wíelle, *m.*, wíell, *m.*, and wíelle, *f.*; L<sup>a</sup>. welle, wælle, L<sup>b</sup>. welle, wel, O. wel), 788 f (: telle, *inf.*); wellē, 818, 1584; welle, 804; welle, 808.

wille (A.S. willa, also wílle, *m.* (?) (Ettm. p. 111, and Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.* II, 12); L. wille, iwille, O. wille), 1217 f, 1490 f, 1575 f, 1916 f, 1937 f, 2355 f, 2650 f; wyllē, 1617.

Rhyme words. — spyllē *inf.* (1575, 1916, 1937), fulfillē *inf.* (2650), kyllē *pl. pr. I.* (1217), styllē *adv.* (1490), fille *n.* (2355).

The form without final *-e* is common in Chaucer's other writings; perhaps, therefore, *wyllē*, 1617, really goes back to A.S. gewill(l), *n.*, quasi *jo*-stem from gewile, *n.*, *i*-stem; L. iwil, O. will.

wone (A.S. gewuna, L<sup>a</sup>. iwune, wune, L<sup>b</sup>. wone), 714 f, 1744 f, 2131 f, 2449 f.

Rhyme word. — sone, *filius*.

wreche (A.S. wrecc(e)a, wræcc(e)a, Sievers, § 89, n. 1.; L<sup>a</sup>. wræcche, wrechche, L<sup>b</sup>. wrecche, wrech, O. wreche), 2034.

§ 3. II. Feminine nouns of the *n*-declension (Child, § 4).

aspis (A.S. æspe, also æsp, *f.*), 2648 — so all the MSS. of the first class (cf. Skeat. *L.G.W.*, xxxviii ff.) except A12. — is probably due merely to bad spelling (influenced by the genitive in *aspis leaf?*).

culuer (A.S. culfre, L<sup>a</sup>. culuerin *pl.*, L<sup>b</sup>. coluere *pl.*, O. cullfre), 2319 (+ *cons.*). There is always more or less uncertainty in regard to words ending in *-re*; *-er* and *-re* seem to be used indifferently.

cuppe (A.S. cuppe; cuppa given by Ettm., p. 363, is due to a misunderstanding; L<sup>a</sup>. cuppe, L<sup>b</sup>. coupe, O. cuppes *pl.*), 647; coupe, 1122.

flye (A.S. fléoge, L<sup>a</sup>. fleogen, flegen *pl.*, L<sup>b</sup>. fleien *pl.*), 381 f (: gentyre); flye, 379; flye, 378.

herte (A.S. heorte, L. heorte, O. heorte, herrte), 390 f, 491 f, 661 f, 696 f, 810 f, 844 f, 850 f, 865 f, 1300 f, 1351 f, 1578 f, 1704 f, 1729 f, 1795 f, 1803 f, 2339 f, 2628 f; herte, 133, 172, 868, 915, 1520, 1742, 2035, 2183, 2190, 2280, 2347, 2631; herte, 31, 830, 1078, 1911, 2122, 2184, 2684; erte, 1233.

It is possible to read 1294 in two ways:

Myn dere hertē whiche that I lovē most

or Myn dere hertē whiche that I lovē most;

of these the former seems supported by the fact, that only G. Th. B. R. have *herte*, the rest *hert*; but, on the other hand, the relative *which that* seems usually to be accented on *which*, cf. the examples given in § 78. P. R. om. *that*. In 1063 G. has:

And in hire herte she hadde routhe & wo (so A 28.);

Tr. and Ag. have: And in hyr (her) hert[e] had she routhe (rewth) and wo, which may be the correct reading. The passage is very corrupt, but all the MSS. of the second class (cf. Skeat, *L.G.W.*, pp. xxxviii ff.) seem to go back to a common original:

And in hire herte hadde routhe and wo;

cf. And in hir herte | and roouthe and woo. Fx.

And in her hert hadde and woo. Tn.

And in hir herte had routh & wo. B.

And in her herte had routhe and wo. Th.

larke (A.S. láwerce, P.Pl. larke), 141.

lylye (A.S. lilie), 161, *in* lylye (*dissyl.*) flourys.

myte (A.S. míte; cf. M.L.G. míte, M.Du. mijte, cf. Skeat. *Trans.*

*Phil. Soc. for* 1888-90, p. 305), 741 f (: lyte *adj.*).

oule (A.S. úle, O. & N. ule), 2253.

rose (A.S. róse; also O.F. rose), 254 f (: glose *inf.*); rose, 344, 613; rose, 460 (+ cæsurā); rosē leues, 160.

side (A.S. síde, L., O. side), 1719 f (: abyde *inf.*), 751; syde, 1029 f (: wyde *adv.*), 1211 f (: ride *inf.*); syde, 750.

sithe (A.S. sfðe, P.Pl. sithe), 646 f (: blythe *adj. pl.*).

sunne (A.S. sunne, L<sup>a</sup>. sunne, L<sup>b</sup>. sonne, O. sunne), 636 f, 1006 f, 2426 f; sunne, 791; sunne, 1525; sonne, 93, 116, 1779. In 48 we should probably read: To sen this flour agen the sunne sprede, as all the other MSS. do, instead of: To sen these flouris agen the sunne to sprede. In 51 we must read *sunne* unless *begynngs* be emended to *gynneth*, the reading of all the other MSS.; of course it would not do to adopt as a whole the verse given by the other MSS., for the differences between the two forms of the verse depend on the fact that one belongs to the first version of the prologue, the other to the second.

Rhyme words. — gone *n.* (636), bygunne *pp.* (1006), I-wunne *pp.* (2426).

throte (A.S. þrote, also þrotu, *f.*, see Sievers, § 279 and n. 4), 295; throte, 1794, 2005, 2657; throte, 1803.

tunge (A.S. tunge, L., O. tunge), 1699 f, 2526 f; tunge, 670; tonge, 2334. In 1675 all the MSS. have: And of thyn (thy) tunge the infynyt graciousnesse (grevousnesse Ag).

Rhyme words. — 3onge *def. adj.* (1699), I-wronge *pp.* (2526).

tunne (A.S. tunne, L<sup>a</sup>. tunne, L<sup>b</sup>. tonnes, tonnen *pl.*), 79 f (: be-gunne *pp.*).

wise (A.S. wíse, L., O. wíse<sup>1</sup>), 20 f, 290 f, 426 f, 1207 f, 2458 f, 2640 f; carolewyse, 201 f (: devyse *inf.*); wise, 1692.

Rhyme words. — devyse *inf.* (290, 426, 1207, 2458, 2640), wyse *adj. pl.* (20).

<sup>1</sup> *wis* given by Madden for L<sup>b</sup>. occurs only once, so far as I can discover (III, 110), in the phrase *sel-couðe wis* = in a strange manner; the line immediately following is incomplete at both ends.

§ 4. III. Neuters of the *n*-declension (Child, § 2).

eye (A.S. *éage*, L. *e3e*, O. *e3he*), 11 f, 1600 f; *eye*, 507. *eye*, 237, but all the other MSS. have *eyen* (in various spellings). If we had the G. text alone, no one would doubt that in 2043 *neuere* is a dissyllable and *eye* a monosyllable; but all the other MSS. (except Tr., which has *any*) have *eyen* (in various spellings) instead of *eye*, thus necessitating either the reduction of *neuere* to a monosyllable or the slurring of *eyen*. The verse, in G., is: Syn that he saw me neuere with eye syght.

dayesye (A.S. *dægeséage*), 500 f, 512 f; dayseye (4 syll.), 150 f, 196 f; dayesyē, 55; dayesyē, 519; daysyē, 156; dayseie, 92.

Rhyme words.—lye *n.* (11), lye *mentiri* (150), espye *inf.* (196), deye *inf.* (500), stellesye (*L. stellefyē*) *s. pr. S.* (512), cumpaynye (1600).

§ 5. In *lady* (A.S. *hlæfdige*, *f.*) and *pley* (A.S. *plega*, *m.*) the final vowel disappears, and in *pley* the *g* unites with the preceding vowel to form a diphthong (Child, § 5; ten Brink, § 211). In *fo* (A.S. *gefá*, *m.*) an old (A.S.) contraction is preserved (ten Brink, § 211; Sievers, § 277, n. 2).

*lady* (A.S. *hlæfdige*, L<sup>a</sup>. *læfdi*, *læuedi*, *lafdie*, L<sup>b</sup>. *lafdi*, (L. has a large variety of forms), O. *laffdi3*), *lady* (*before vowels and consonants*), 444, 983, 993, 1035, 1042, 1331, 1466, 1492, 1497, 1503, 1620, 1750, 1827, 2029, 2123, 2424. In 1210 Trin. and Add. 9. have correctly *lat* (*late* Add. 9.) *I* for *lady*. In 2073: And mercy lady I can not ellis (more, Fx. B.) seye, the *-y* of *lady* seems to be elided before *I*, or perhaps it is better to say that *-y I can* forms a single foot; cf. 2155, 2320, 2592, 2663, etc. *pley* (A.S. *plega*, L<sup>a</sup>. *plæ3e*, *plei3e*, L<sup>b</sup>. *pleay*, *plawe*, *pley*), 1698 (*followed by a consonant*).

*fo* (A.S. *gefá*, *subst.*, *fáh*, *adj.*, L<sup>a</sup>. *ifa*, *iua*, L<sup>b</sup>. *ifo*, *fo*), 1407 f, 2085 f, 2559 f; 248.

Rhyme words.—also *adv.* (2085), so *adv.* (1407, 2559).

§ 6. Anglo-Saxon masculine and neuter vowel-stems that have a final vowel (*-e* or *-u*) in the nominative singular, preserve this vowel as *-e* in *L.G.W.* (cf. Child, § 7).

For convenience the following classes of nouns are thrown together in a single alphabetical list: (i.) masculine *jo-(ja-)*

stems with long stem-syllable, — *ende*; (ii.) masculine *i*-stems with short stem-syllable, — *bite*, *hete*, *lyge*. *mete*, *stede*; (iii.) neuter *i*-stems with short stem-syllable, — *spere*; (iv.) masculine *u*-stems with short stem-syllable, — *sunu*. Masculine nomina agentis in *-ere* (which properly belong under i.) and abstract nouns in *-scipe* (which properly belong under ii.) seldom retain *-e*; see § 7. For *wil*, *wille*, see § 2.

bit (A.S. *bite*, *m.*), 1208 (*followed by a vowel*; *Fx has bitte*, *Th. bytte*, *Bod. bite*, *Pep. bete*).

ende (A.S. *ende*, *m.*, *L.*, *O. ende*), 651 f, 904 f, 2620 f, 2697 f; *ende*, 1774, 2341; *ende*, 2221, 2397.

Rhyme words. — shynde *pp.* (2697), spende *pl. pr. I.* (651), synde 3. *s. pr. S.* (904), winde *pl. pr. I.* (2620).

*-ere*, see § 7.

hate (A.S. *hete*, *m.* (cf. *hatian*)), 23, 331.

lye (A.S. *lyge*), 12 f (: eye).

mete (A.S. *mete*, *L<sup>a</sup>.* *mæte*, *metc*, *L<sup>b</sup>.* *mete*, *O. mete*), 1108 f (: *sete pp.*); *mete*, 1602, 2040, 2355.

*-shipe*, see § 7.

sone (A.S. *sunu m.*, *L<sup>a</sup>.* *sune*, *sone*, *L<sup>b</sup>.* *sone*, *O. sune*), 715 f, 1745 f, 2130 f, 2448 f; *sonē*, 1934, 1945; *sonē*, 942, 1086, 1130, 1138, 1953, 2023, 2055, 2099, 2564; *sonē*, 1134, 1789, 1975, 1979, 2296.

Ten Brink says: "*sone*, *wone* kommen im Vers nie als zweisilbig vor." *Spr. u. V.* § 261. That they usually do not is true; but cf. 1934 and 1945 (where all the MSS. agree), and also Freudenberger, *Ueb. das Fehlen des Auflakts*, p. 67.

spere (A.S. *spere*, *n.*, *L.* *spere*, *L<sup>a</sup>.* *sper*), 1215 f (: *bere ursus*), 2106 (: *swere inf.*).

stede (A.S. *stede*, *m.*, *L.* *stude*, *L<sup>b</sup>.* *stede*, *O. stede*), 522.

stel, see § 7.

wil, will, see § 2.

#### § 7. Exceptions to § 6.

A.S. *stle*, neuter *jo*-stem, loses its *-e* in *L. G. W.* The final *-e* of the termination *-shipe* (A.S. *-scipe*, *m.*, *i*-stem) is always written, but sounded only once. The final *-e* of the termination *-ere* (A.S. *-ere*, *m.*, *jo*-stem) is not sounded; perhaps it may have



been influenced, to some extent, at least, by French nouns in *-er*.

stel (A.S. stéle, style, *n.*, L. stal), 2582 f (: wel, *adv*).

-ere (A.S. -ere, also L.W.S. -re, *m.*; Sievers, § 248): foulere, 120, 126. — gynner, 1231. — lðvere, 480, 905, 922, 1669, 1958, 2226, 2511; lðvere, 1537; lovère, 457, 1236. G. has lðverē in 456; but all the other MSS. have *ought* [ē] for *may*, which not only improves the metre of the verse, but also gives a better sense. — 3ever, 2228. Here also may be put (on account of its ending), deuourer, 1369. — philosophre (O.F. philosophe), 365 f, probably took on the ending *-re* through the influence of these nouns.

-shipe (A.S. -scipe, L<sup>a</sup>. -scipe, L<sup>b</sup>. -sipe): felauēschepē, 947 (all the MSS. agree); felauschep, 965. — worschep, 129; worshep, 659, 1087; worchep, 1443. — The examples here given are, of course, too few to warrant any definite conclusion in regard to Chaucer's practice.

- § 8. Anglo-Saxon feminine vowel-stems that have *-u* in the nominative end in *L. G. W.* in *-e* throughout the singular (except in the genitive).

The following list includes (i.) *ā* (*ō*)-stems with short stem-syllable: *andswaru*, *caru*, *lagu*, *lufu*, *sacu*, *sceamu*, *talū*; (ii.) abstract nouns in *-u*, *-o*, corresponding to Gothic abstracts in *-ei* and usually indeclinable in the singular: *fyllu*, *hælu*, *hætu*; (iii.) feminine *u*-stems with short stem-syllable: *duru*.

answære (A.S. ondswaru, andswaru, Durh. ondsuere, *acc.*, L<sup>a</sup>. ændswere, ændsware, -swere, -sweore, ænsware, ansuare, ensware, L<sup>b</sup>. answer, O. anndsware, -swere), 387.

care (A.S. caru, L., O. care), 2208 f (: fare *pp*).

dore (A.S. duru; cf. dor, *n.* (cf. Zupitza, *Deutsche Literatur-Zeitung*, 1885, p. 610), L<sup>a</sup>. dure, dore, L<sup>b</sup>. dore, O. dure), 2143, 2677; dore, 1718 (*followed by the caesura*).

fille (A.S. fyllu; but cf. Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.* II. § 19, p. 33), 817 f (: stille *adv*).

hele (A.S. hælu; also hæl, -e, *f.*, see Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.* II, § 19; L. hele, L<sup>a</sup>. hæle, O. hæle), 1159 f (: dele *inf*).

hete (A.S. hætu; also hæte, -an, *f.*; L. hate, O. hæte), 774 f (: wete *adj. pl*).

lawe (A.S. lagu (cf. O. N. lög), *f.*; also lah, *n.* (?) and laga, *m.*; L. laze, L<sup>b</sup>. lawe, O. lazhe), 256 f (: withdrawe *inf.*), 399; fadyr in lawë, 2272.

loue (A.S. lufu; also lufe, -an, *f.*, see Sievers, § 279, n. 1, Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.* II, §§ 33 and 14, Platt, *Anglia*, VI, 176; L<sup>a</sup>. lufe, L<sup>b</sup>. loue, O. lufe), 142 f, 158 f, 447 f, 1140 f, 1526 f, 2365 f (all : aboue *adv.*), 727 f (: I-shoue *pp.*), 1380 f (: shoue *pp.*); loue, 327, 453, 466, 481, 543, 667, 681, 742, 803, 862, 892, 921, 1040, 1079, 1187, 1379, 1385, 1387, 1581, 2227, 2235, 2264, 2455, 2492, 2521, 2561; loue, 23, 137, 599, 704, 748, 904, 2447.

In only two instances does *loue* seem to have a final -e within the line. Of these one is certainly incorrect and the other is doubtful. 128 is corrupt; all the other MSS. give a good line with *loue* as a monosyllable. 288 is very different in all the other MSS.; it is possible that *louë* of the G. version should be *loues*, pl. On *loue* in 1187, cf. Skeat, *L. G. W.*, p. xxxvi. It may be worthy of remark that in 1187 *loue* is neuter according to all the MSS. Ten Brink (*Spr. u. V.*, § 208) says: "*love* ist bei Chaucer männlichen Geschlechts"; perhaps this is true only when it is not *love* but the *God of Love* that is thought of.

sake (A.S. sacu, L., O. sake, *strife*), 100 f, 130 f, 1272 f, 1318 f, 1337 f.

Rhyme words. — awake *inf.* (1337), make *n.* (130), make *inf.* (100, 1272), take *inf.* (1318).

shame (A.S. sceamu, scamu, sceomu, L<sup>a</sup>. scome, sceome, scame, L<sup>b</sup>. same, seame, O. shame), 1813 f, 2069 f, 2388 f, 2586 f, 2702 f; schame, 300 f, 457 f, 478 f, 589 f; shame, 1835, 2332; shame, 1028, 2082; schame, 523.

Rhyme words. — blame *n.* (457), game *n.* (478, 2702), name *n.* (300, 589, 1813, 2069, 2388, 2586).

tale (A.S. talu, L., O. tale), 495, 789, 957, 1434, 1458, 2675; tale, 328, 2723; tale, 1921 (all the MSS. agree).

§ 9. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable take in *L. G. W.* a final -e (perhaps derived from the oblique cases) throughout the singular, except in the genitive (cf. Child, § 16; ten Brink, § 207).

The following list includes: (i.) *ā*-stems, — *bót*, *cest*, *healf*, *heall*, *help*, *hèord*, *lëaf*, *mearc*, *méd*, *rest*, *rót* (O.N. *rót*, *f.*), *sorh*,

*sáwól, spæc, stund, þrág, hwíl, wund, geogoð* (originally an *i*-stem); (ii.) *jā*-stems, — *blīðs, hell, cæg, -nis, synn*; (iii.) *wā*-stems, — *mæd, ræw*; (iv.) *i*-stems, — *bén* (influenced by O.N. *bón*), *dæd, gecynd, gléd, nled, cwén, scæð, gesihð, tld, gift*; (v.) *myrgð, O.N. slágð, slæwð, tréowð, wræð(ðo)*. *Routhe* is for convenience included in this section.

blys (A.S. *blīðs*, bliss, L., O. blisse), 493 f (: is), 504 f (: 3is).

bone (O.N. *bón*, *boén*, *f.*, A.S. *bén*, O. bene, L. bone), 1596 f (: to gone *ger.*), 2340 f (: sone *adv.*).

bote (A.S. *bót*, L., O. bote), 1076 f, 1992 f, 2710 f.

Rhyme words. — sote *adj.* (1076), light of fote (2710), at his herte rote (1992).

cheste (A.S. *cest*, *cist*, *cyst*, L.<sup>a</sup>. *chæsten*, *cheste*, *dat.*, L.<sup>b</sup>. *cheste*, *dat.*, P.Pl.<sup>c</sup>. *cheste*), 498 f (: Alceste).

dede (A.S. *dæd*, *déd*, L. *dede*, O. *dede*, *dæd*-bote), 455 f, 625 f, 1262 f, 1556 f, 1707 f, 1824 f, 2138 f, 2238 f, 2324 f, 2542 f; deede, 861 f.

Rhyme words. — drede *n.* (455, 861), maydynhede *n.* (2324), nede *n.* (1707), lede *inf.* (625), rede *inf.* (1262, 1556, 2138, 2542), rede *1 s. pr. I.* (1824, 2238).

gledz (A.S. *gléd*, Gower *glede*, P.Pl. *glede*), 735.

halue (A.S. *healf*). Only the adjective occurs; cf. 177, 2167; half goddys, 373.

halle (A.S. *heall*, *hall*, L. *halle*), 1602 f (: with *alle*); halle, 1832.

helle (A.S. *hell*, L. *helle*, O. *helle*), 2 f (: telle *inf.*), 502; helle, 6, 504, 1104.

helpe (A.S. *help*, L. *help*, *nom.*, *helpe*, *dat.*, O. *hellpe*), 1616; helpe, 2432; helpe, 1627, 1987.

hirde (A.S. *héord*, L.<sup>a</sup>. *heorde*, L.<sup>b</sup>. *hierde*), 1212.

keye (A.S. *cæg*; also (rarely) *cæge*, -an, Pet. Chron. *keie*, *dat.*, P.Pl.<sup>b</sup>. *keye*), 26 f (: aweye); keye, 2298.

kynde (A.S. *cynd*, *n.*, *gecynd*, *f.* (later *n.*); late A.S. *gecynde*, *n.*, and *gecyndu*, -o, *f.*, see Sievers, § 267 b. and n. 4; L. *icunde*, *cunde*, O. *kinde*), 178 f (: fynde *inf.*); kynde, 377, 2449. Here also may be put *mankynde*, 414 (: *I-fynde inf.*); for it was treated as if composed, not of *monn* and *cynn*, but of *monn* and (*ge*)*cynd*.

leue (A.S. léaf, L<sup>a</sup>. leue, læue, leaue, lefe, leaf, L<sup>b</sup>. leue, lefue, O. lefe), 1320 f (: eue), 2281 f (: leue *inf.*); leuë, 2137, 2300, 2475; leuz, 769, 2162, 2283, 2621.

marke (A.S. mearc, L. marke), 784.

mede (A.S. méd, L., O. mede), 1662.

mede, medewe (A.S. mæd, méd; *gen.* mæde, mædwe; L. medewe, *dat.*); mede, 41 f, 47 f, 144 f; medewe, 104; medewe, 91, 107.

Rhyme words. — rede *adj. pl.* (41), sprede *inf.* (47, 144).

mynde (A.S. gemynd, *f.* and *n.*, O. minde), 18 f, 270 f, 946 f, 1366 f, 2717 f.

Rhyme words. — fynde *inf.* (18, 270, 946, 1366), un-kynde *adj. s.* (2717).

myrthe (A.S. myrgð, myrð, L. murhðe, murðe), 1241.

nede (A.S. nled (also *n.*, cf. Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.* II, § 26), néd, néad, néod, L<sup>a</sup>. ned, neod, neode, L<sup>b</sup>. neod, neode, O. ned, *acc.* nede), 1706 (: dede *n.*); nede, 1488.

-nesse, *termination* (A.S. -nes, -nis, -nys, L., O., P.Pl. -nesse) :

besynesse, 412 f, 1722 f. — clenness, 297 f. — derknesse, 95. — falsenesse, 463, falsenesse, 1671. — fayrnesse, 1072 f, 1674 f. — gentilnes, 1404 f. — gladnesse, 1101 f, 1231. — goodness, 512 f, 527 f, 1040 f, 1054 f; goodnes, 268 f; goodness, 479, 508, 1473, 1493; goodness, 534. — graciousnesse, 1675 f. — hardynesse, 892 f. — holynesse, 296 f. — idilnesse, 1723. — kyndënesse, 1664 f. — liknesse, 1142. — lustynes, 1405 f. — meknesse, 204. — onstedefastnesse, 526 f. — semelynesse, 1041 f. — stedefastnesse, 1687 f, 2123 f. — tendirnesse, 2280. — wekedenes, 269 f. — werynesse, 2182, 2429. — wildyrnesse, 970 f. — witnesse, 515 f. — worthyness, 2537.

As will be observed, there is only one case of the final -e of the termination -nesse sounded in the interior of the verse.

Rhyme words. — Nouns in -nesse rhyme principally with one another, but the following rhymes also occur : Boece (412), gesse, *1 s. pr. I.* (892, 1072, 1664), Lucesse (1687), duchesse (2123), hunteresse (970).

queene (A.S. cwén, cwæn; also cwëne, -an, cf. Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.* II, § 26; L<sup>a</sup>. quen, quene, L<sup>b</sup>. cwean, cweane, cwene, O. cwen), 228 f (: grene *adj.*), 317 f (: sene *adj.*), 1035 f (: sene *ger.*),

1191 f (: kene *adj.*), 1395 f (: isene *adj.*); queen[ē], 582; quien, 1466 f (: shene *adj.*); quien[ē], 1189; quene, 145 f, 173 f (: grene *adj.*), 695 f (: sene *adj.*); quenē, 1109; queenē, 499, 607, 1053, 1164; quene, 422, 1126; qene (*altered from caue*), 2371; queen (+ vowel), 408, 1143, 1146, 2368; quien (+ vowel), 1222; quyen (+ vowel), 1057, 1135, 1150. But often the final *e* is apocopated: queenē, 523; queen (+ cons.), 654, 1004, 1210, 1547; 993 f (: ben *pl. pr. I.*); quien (+ cons.), 707; 1283 f (: been *pp.*), 1306 f (: fleen *inf.*), 2432 f (: bien *inf.*); quen (+ cons.), 1309; quyen (+ cons.), 1061.

reste (A.S. rest, ræst, L<sup>a</sup>. reste, *dat.*, L<sup>b</sup>. raste, *dat.*, O. resste), 52 f, 94 f, 507 f, 1112 f, 2468 f, 2668 f; 1164, 1782; onreste, 1339 f.

Rhyme words. — Alceste (507), leste *pt. I.* (2468), laste *pr. S.* (1339, 2668), leste *pt. S.?* or *I.?* (1112), weste *inf.* (52, 94).

rewe (A.S. ráw, ræw, A.R. a rewe, P.Pl<sup>c</sup>. rewe, by rewe), 285 (: a fewē) *in* on a rewe.

rote (O.N. rót, *f.*; A.S. rót (Lchd. I, 378), L<sup>a</sup>. rote (*dat. pl.?*), L<sup>b</sup>. rotes, *pl.*, O. rote), 1993 f, 2613 f.

Rhyme words. — bote *n.* (1993), sote *adj.* (2613).

routhe (not in A.S.; formed from the verb reouwen, A.S. hréowan, on the analogy of other abstract nouns in *-th*; cf. O.N. hrygð, hryggva; L<sup>a</sup>. reoðe, reouðe, L<sup>b</sup>. roupe), 286 f, 669 f, 799 f, 1982 f (all: trouthe *n.*), 1567 f (: ontrouthe *n.*); routhe, 1034, 1063, 1249, 1257, 1311, 2077, 2200; reuthe, 1345.

schede [other MSS. read schethe] (A.S. scéað, scæð, L<sup>a</sup>. scaðe, scæðe, L<sup>b</sup>. scape, sepe, *dat.*, O. shæpe, *dat.*), 888 f (: dede = *death*).

syghte (A.S. gesihð, L<sup>a</sup>. siht, *nom.*, sehte, isihðe, sihþeðe, *dat.*, L<sup>b</sup>. seht, *nom.*, sihte, *dat.*, O. sihhþe), 1429 f (: bryghte *adv.*), 2275 f (: myghte *pt.*).

synne (A.S. synn, L. sunne, *acc.*, O. sinne), 2200 f (: inne); synnē, 2199.

sleyghte (O.N. slægð, slægð; not in A.S.; L<sup>b</sup>. slehþe, *dat.*, sleahþe, *nom.*, sleppe, P.Pl<sup>b</sup>. sleighte, <sup>c</sup> sleithe), 734, 931; slyghte, 2084; sleyte, 1650.

slouthe (A.S. slæwð, L<sup>a</sup>. slaupe, *dat.*, P.Pl<sup>a</sup>. sleuþthe, <sup>b</sup> sleuthe), 1722.

sorwe (A.S. sorg, sorh, L<sup>a</sup>. sorhþe, sorþe, L<sup>b</sup>. sorewe, sorwe, sorþwe, O. sorrþhe), 1203 f, 1231 f (: morwe); sorwë, 946, 1248, 2382; sorwe, 1919, 2374, 2558.

soulë (A.S. sawol, L. saule, O. sawle), 1806; soulë, 1339.

speche (A.S. spræc, spréc, L.W.S. spæc, spéc, L. spæche, speche, O. spæche), 1627 f (: be-seche *1 s. pr. I.*); spechë, 1704; speche, 1606, 1084.

stounde (A.S. stund, L. stunde, O. stunnð), 949 f, 2376 f (: founde *pp.*).

throwe (A.S. þrág, L<sup>a</sup>. þrowe, O. þraþhe), 866 f (: knowe *inf.*), 1286 f (: overblowe *pp.*).

tyde (A.S. tíð, L. tide, *dat.*, O. tid), 304 f (: ouyde), 770 f (: espiede *pt. S.*), 783 f (: wide *adj.*), 2010 (: hyde *inf.*).

trouthe (A.S. tréowð, L. treouðe, O. throwþe), 287 f, 668 f, 798 f, 1983 f (: routhë); trouthë, 778; treuthë, 2466; trouthe, 221, 462, 1041, 1255, 1374, 2119, 2586; trouth (+ in), 214. on-trouthe, 1566 f (: routhë), 1677.

while (A.S. hwíl, L<sup>a</sup>. while, L<sup>b</sup>. wile, O. whil, while), 417 f, 1003 f, 1571 f, 2227 f, 2551 f; whilë, 2391.

Rhyme words.—Cecile (417), Virgile (1003), begyle *inf.* (1571, 2227), begile *pl. pr. I.* (2551).

wounde (A.S. wund, L., O. wunde, *obl.*), 873 f (: on the groundë); woundë, 893; wounde, 851.

wrethë (A.S. wræð, wræð (Leo), wræð(ð)o, L. wraððe, L<sup>b</sup>. wreppe, O. wrappe), 448.

þifte (A.S. gift, L<sup>a</sup>. þeue, L<sup>b</sup>. þeft, þift), 441.

þouthe (A.S. geoguð, L<sup>a</sup>. þuþeðe), 2350 f (: couthe, *3 s. pt. I.*); þouthë, 1674.

#### § 10. Nouns in *-yng*, *-ynge*.

I. The following list includes such nouns (including “gerunds”) in *-ynge* as rhyme with an infinitive in *L. G. W.*

buryinge, 698 (: styngë). — compleynynge, 1357 (: syngë). — coueytyngë, 1756 (: syngë).

II. Here follow all the other cases of nouns in *-ynge* in rhyme. Where no note is added, the rhyme word is another noun in

*-ynge*; an asterisk indicates that the rhyme word is a present participle (or participial adjective) in *-ynge*.

arguynge, 465. — berynge, \* 2553. — compleynyng, 2218 (: *thyng* *nom. s.*). — comyng, 1592 (: *kyng*); homcomyng, 2100 (: *thyng*). — doinge, 2232 (: *thyng* *acc. s.*), \* 1267. — dwellyng, 2142. — entryng, 2143. — gouernyng, 581, 1400 (: *kyng*). — konnyng, 398. — knowynge, 2156 (: *synge* *pl. pr. I.*). — lyuynge, 535. — louynge, 534. — makynge, 399. — menynge, 464. — pleyng, 1469 (: *kyng*). — rehersyng, 1185. — sarmounyng, 1184. — scarmuchyng, 1910 (: *kyng*). — slepyng, \* 1333. — ymagynyng, 331 (: *thyng*).

III. Nouns in *-yng*, *-ynge*, before consonants.

axynge, 239. — huntynge, 1211; huntynge, 1191. — lokynge, 172. — makynge, 62. — metynge, 784. — repentyng, 133. — wowyng, 1553. — wrytynge, 532.

IV. Before vowels or *h*- (before a vowel, unless otherwise noted).

betraysynge, 2460. — biddynge, 837 (+ *hath*). — bledynge, 849. — buryng, 1831 (the last two syllables are slurred). — clothynge, 2355. — compleynyng, 1971. — dawënyng, 1188; dawynyng, 2185. — engendryng, 414. — exilyng, 1680. — feynyng, 1556. — fortheryng, 69. — leuynge, 475 (Fx. has *lovyng*, — the correct reading). — louynge, 428, 1662. — preysyng, 129; preysynge, 404. — reclaymyng, 1371. — strangelyng, 807. — techynge, 2146. — weddyng, 616, 2473; wedynge, 2250. In 2250 *wedyng* is an abstract noun; in 616, and 2473, concrete.

*morwynge*, 1483, should be *morwenyng*, as in Fx. and A28.

§ 11. The following feminine nouns with long stem-syllables do not take *-e* in *L. G. W.*:

(i.) *ā*-stems, — *brōd*, *foreweard*; (ii.) *jā*-stems, — *æx*; (iii.) *i*-stems, — *brýd*, *hæfen*, *miht*, *wiht*, *weorold*; (iv.) consonant stems, — *bóc*, *niht*.

For other feminine nouns which in *L. G. W.* sometimes or always lack final *-e*, cf. *answere*, *dore*, *loue*, *tale*, § 8; *blys*, *helpe*, *-nesse*, *queene*, § 9; nouns in *-ynge*, § 10; and *hand*, § 13.

**ax** (A.S. *æx*, *eax*, *æcs*, *æsc*, *acas*; also *acase*, *-an*, *axe*, *-an*; L<sup>a</sup>. *æx*, *eax*, L<sup>b</sup>. *ax*, *hax*; O. *axe*), 2000 (+ vowel); *polax*, 642 (+ cons.)

bok (A.S. bōc, L. boc, O. boc), 264 f (: forsok 3 s. *pt. I.*); 348, 1608 (+ vowel); 405, 1022 (+ cons.).

brod (A.S. bród, O. and N. brod, G. and E. brod), 121 (: good *adj. s.*).

bryd (A.S. brýd, L. brude, burde, O. brid), 2672 (+ vowel); 2622 (+ cons.).

forward (A.S. foreweard, also forewarde, *Chr.* 1094; L. forward, foreward, -e), 2500 (+ cons.).

hauene (A.S. hæfen; also hæfene, -an; L. hauene), 963; hauene, 2552.

myght (A.S. mi(e)ht, meaht, L. mihte, O. mihht, mihhte), 1801 f (: knyght), 2132 f (: ryght *n.*), 2326 f (: ryght *adj. s.*); 1796, 2651 (+ cons.); mygh, 1067 f (: knyght), 1623 (+ cons.).

nyght (A.S. ni(e)ht, neht, neaht; L. niht, O. nihht), 779, 834, 1295, 1640, 2622, 2678; nygh, 335; a nyght, 1475 f (: wight *n.*); 1292 (+ vowel); 1414, 1643 (+ cons.); at nyght, 1393 f (: ryght *n.*), 1637 f (: knyght); 796 (+ cons.); in a nyght, 1781 (+ cons.); in the nyght, 1543 f (: knyght); in the day or nygh, 685 f (: knyght); of the nyght, 95 (+ vowel); on a nyght, 1162 f (: lyght *n.*); to nyght, 1710 (+ cons.); be nyghte, 1119 f (: weyghte *n. dat.*), 838 f (myghte 3 s. *pr. S.*), 1289 f (: dyghte *inf.*), 1968 f (: hyghte 3 s. *pt. I.*), 2154 f (: dyghte 3 s. *pt. I.*); be nyghtē, 2066 (+ cons.); by nyghte, 2419. Cf. *fortenycht*, § 43.

*Be nyghte* is the only phrase in which *nyght* has a final -e; in 2066 the only way to avoid reading *be nyghtē* is to make *spirit* dissyllabic, which gives a very harsh verse.

wight (A.S. wiht, wuht, *f.* and *n.*, Sievers, § 267, n. 3; L. wiht, whit, O. wihht, P.Pl<sup>b</sup>. wyght, P.Pl<sup>c</sup>. wight, wiht, wiȝt), 1474 f (: a nyght), 2042 f (: eye syght); 1477, 1782, 1783, 2134, 2214, 2677.

world (A.S. woruld, W.S. weorold; L. weorld, -e, weoreld, weoruld, woreld, world, -e, worle, O. weorelld), 150, 176, 192, 373, 587, 602, 1013, 1044, 2229, 2236; worl, 1028.

§ 12. Apocope of A.S. -n in nouns is found in *L. G. W.* in the following words:

clewe (A.S. cliwen, cliowen; Sweet gives cléowe; Ettm., p. 393, cliwe, -an; O. and N. cle(o)we), 2140, 2148; ciewe, 2016.



eue (A.S. *æfen*, *éfen*, *n.* and *m.*, L.<sup>a</sup>. *æuen*, L.<sup>b</sup>. *heue*, O. *efenn*), at eve, 1321 f (: *leue n.*); euëtyde, 770.

game (A.S. *gomen*, *gamen*, L. *gomen*, *gamen*, *game*), 478 f (: *schame*), 2702 f (: *shame*); game, 33.

kynrede (A.S. *cyn(n)*, *n.*, *-ræden*, *f.*, cf. *folc-ræden*, *fréond-ræden*, etc., P.Pl.<sup>b</sup>. *kynrede*), 2094 f (: *for drede n.*).

mayde (A.S. *mægden*, L.W.S. *mæden*, *n.*, L. *maiden*, *maide*, O. *mazðden*, P.Pl. *mayden*, *mayde*), 487 f (: *seyde 3 s. pt. I.*), 1548 f (: *sayde 3 s. pt. I.*); maydë, 2532; mayde, 2690; miade, 725 (+ caesura; spelling corrected); maydyn, 429.

morwe (A.S. *margen*, *morgen*, L. *morþen*, *morþe*, *morwe*, P.Pl. *morwe*, *morwen*), 2104 f (: *to borwe n.*); 49, 1202, 1230, 1645, 1757, 2111; morwe, 54, 671 (+ caesura).

§ 13. *Hand* (A.S. *hond*, *fem. u-stem*). Cf. also *myght*, § 11.

*hand* (A.S. *hond*, *hand*, *f.*, L. *hond*, *hand*, *dat. -e*, O. *hand*, *wipp hand*, *hande*), 890 (*nom.*, + cons.); in his ryght hand, 942 (+ vowel); into his hand, 1282 (+ cons.); in his hond, 145, 2173 (+ vowel); be the hond, 173 (+ *he*); in *hande*, 166, 972.

§ 14. The following masculine and neuter nouns which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative, sometimes or always take an *-e* in one or more cases in *L. G. W.* :

- (i.) masculine *o*-stems, — *borh*, *botm*, *déað*, *fær* (*fēr*), *græf* (*graf*), *-hād*, *hēap*, *heofon*, *ord*, *scrift*, *slæp*, *stefn*, *strond*, *tún*, *weg*;
- (ii.) neuter *o*-stems, — *bord*, *fýr*, *gæt* (*geat*), *géar* (*gér*), *gód*, *hors*, *hús*, *lif*, *scip*, *sðð*, *tempel*, *wápen*, *wíf*, *wil*;
- (iii.) masculine *jo*-stems, — *brymm*;
- (iv.) neuter *jo*-stems, — *bed* (*d*), *híew*, *scrín* (?) ;
- (v.) neuter *wo*-stems, — *cnéo* (*w*) ;
- (vi.) masculine *i*-stems, — *flyht*, *giest*;
- (vii.) neuter *i*-stems, — *gefēr*, (*ge*)*wiht*;
- (viii.) masculine consonant-stem, — *fót*.

It is impossible at present to make a final classification of the various kinds of *-e*'s here represented; that cannot be done until all the material has been collected. The word *gate*, for example, seems in the *Legend of Good Women* to have a final *-e* only in the phrase *at the gate*, but the *Troilus* shows that it was dissyllabic even in the accusative. On the other hand, in the *Troilus* there are no instances of *slep* and *wyf* with final *-e*, whereas the *Legend* has a *slepe*, and *to wyve*. The following classification is, therefore, only temporary :

(a) Petrified phrases (cf. Kluge in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 900). These are the phrases which have given rise to the supposition that the regular ending of the dative in Chaucer is *-e*. An examination of the facts, however, will show that this is not true. The dative ending was preserved in certain phrases which were transmitted and used as phrases, the force of the dative as such being no longer felt. This will appear from a comparison of such phrases as *a bedde*, *to bedde*, *over bordē*, *to dethē*, *for ferē*, *a ferē* (*fyrē*), *to hepe*, *a lyuē*, *a slepe*, *to wyuē*, *to brymmē*, and perhaps *in al his lyuē* (which were probably used without analysis, as *abed*, *afire*, *alive*, *asleep* still are) with such looser groups as *in myn bed*, *unto his deth*, *out of the fuyr* (*fyr*), *upon thyn lyf*, *in myn slep*. Cf. *with childe*, § 18.

(b) To *a* may belong *to the flyghte*, *in fere* (or *i fere*), and *lyght of fote*; but *gefēr* may have been influenced by *gefēra*, and the explanation of the *-e* in *flyghte* and *fote* may need to be sought still further. It seems, however, pretty certain that *in honde* (cf. § 13) and *be nyghte* (cf. § 11) were influenced by these petrified phrases and that the misunderstanding of *aswoune* as a preposition and noun is due to them alone (cf. § 15).

(c) In the following words the *-e* is inorganic, and sometimes incapable of explanation: *grave*, *hewe*, *orde*, *schrifte*, *schrine*, *stronde*, *weye* (but also *wey*). So also in the suffix *-hede* (but also *-hed*, and *-hod*). In *boteme* (disyllabic), *hevene*, *steuene*, it is difficult to decide whether the ultimate or the penultimate *-e* is to be sounded. Cf. *epistelle*. In *to borwe* the *-e* is probably due to the vocalization of the final *-h* of *borh*, cf. *sorwe* (§ 9).

*bedde* (A.S. *bed(d)*, *n.*, L. *bed*, *dat.* *bedde*, O. *bed*, i *min bedd*, o *bedde*); a *bedde*, 2676 f (: *spedde* 3 *s. pt. I.*); to *bedde*, 1644 f, 2622 f (: *spedde* 3 *s. pt. I.*); to *beddē* (+ *cons.*), 1973, 2656.

*bed*: (i.) 2211 (*voc.*; + *cons.*), 1787 (*acc.*; + *cons.*); (ii.) on *myn b.*, 101 f (: *hid pp.*), in *myn* (*thyn*, *hire*, *the*) *bed*, 46 (+ *cons.*), 1808 (+ *vowel*), 1292 (+ *cons.*), 2186 (+ *vowel*), to *hire b.*, 2210 (+ *cons.*).

*borde* (A.S. *bord*, *n.*, L. *bord*, *dat.* *borde*), *ouerborde*, 644 f (: *orde n.*).

*borwe* (A.S. *borh*, *m.*, L. *borh*), to *borwe*, 2105 f (: *to* ')

boteme (A.S. botm, *m.*), 1961 : Doun in the boteme dyrk & wondyr lowe.

brymme (A.S. brymm, *m.* (B.-S.), brymme, *m.* (Somner, Ettm., Sweet), cf. also Skeat, Sheldon, and Murray, s.v.), to the brymme, 2451 f (: sweme, *inf.*).

childe, see § 18.

[dethe] (A.S. deað, *m.*, L. deað, deð, *dat.* deape, deðe, etc., O. dæp, *dat.* dæp, dæpe) ; only in the phrase, *don to dede*, 889 f (: schede = *sheath* ; all the other MSS. read *dethe*, *shethe*, with slight variations of spelling).

*deth* is the form everywhere else, whether before vowels or consonants ; so even in *to the deth*, — dampnede to the deth, 2030 f (: breth *n.*) ; to the deth he almost was I-drevyn, 2430. Other phrases are, — almost at the deth, 2436 f (: breth *n.*) ; is lad unto his deth, 2144 f (: geth 3 *s. pr. I.*) ; drede of deth, 1814 f (: breth *n.*), 2685 ; of (his, thyn) deth, 395, 598, 895 ; afftyr the (his, myn) deth, 580, 934, 2067 ; from the deth, 899 ; aȝens his deth, 1356 ; with-outyn deth, 1616 ; saue (= *except*) the deth. As subj., 2064, 2065, 2485 ; as obj., 692 f (: breth *n.*), 700, 704. In *the deth of Blaunche the duchesse*, 406, the form is of course not subject to variation.

epistelle (A.S. epistol, pistol, *m.*), 305 (only in A-text), is perh. error for *epistles* (so Skeat).

fere (A.S. gefér, *n.*, perhaps influenced by geféra, *m.*, or even confused with it ; L<sup>a</sup>. ifere, iueore), in fere, 217 f (: chere *n.*) ; in feere, 1643 f (: here *adv.*) ; In feere, 1828 f (: cleere *adj. pl. post.*). Cf. *fere*, § 2.

fere (A.S. fæ̃r, fér, *m.*), for fere (+ *cons.*), 2317, 2332 ; for fer (+ *vowel*), 1814.

fere (A.S. fýr, *n.*, L. fur, *dat.* -e, O. fir), a fere, 2493 f (: syre).

Elsewhere without final -e : out of the fuyr (+ *vowel*), 2612 ; vpon the fir (+ *vowel*), 1350 ; with heuenys fer (+ *cons.*), 1221 ; *nom.*, — fyr, 735 f, 1204 f, fyer, 1156 f, fer, 1751 f ; *acc.*, — fyr, 1347, fer, 1433.

Rhyme words. — desyr *n.* (735, 1156, 1751), wyr *n.* (1204), syre *n.* (2493).

flyghte (A.S. flyht, L<sup>a</sup>. fluht, *dat.* -e, L<sup>b</sup>. fliht, *dat.* -e, O. flihht), to the flyght[e], 652 f (: myght[e] *pl. pt. I.*).

fote (A.S. fót, L. fot, *dat.* -e, O. fot, o fot, unnderr fot, wipp fote),  
lyght of fote, 2711 f (: bote); *but* with dredful fot sche, 811.

geste (A.S. giest, gæst, *m.*), 1158.

gód (A.S. gód), see § 18.

grauë (A.S. græf, graf, *m., n.*, or O.N. grøf, *f.* (Sweet)), 903, a doubtful verse; G. *has* That in o graue that we motyn lye; Fx. Tn. Th. Bod. A28. omit *that* before *we*; Tr. A9. substitute *i-fere* for *that*; S. Ff. omit *that* and insert *bothe* after *motyn*; Pep. retains *þat*, but substitutes *to-geder* for *motyn* (the variant spellings of *grauē*, *motyn*, *lye* are disregarded); in that graue, 680. -hede (suffix, A.S. hād, *m.*). The only instance of final -e in such words in *L. G. W.* is: maydynhede, 2325 f (: dede *n.*). The other examples of -hed are: maydynhed, 294 f (: wedewehed *n.*); wedewehed, 295 f; wilfulhed, 355. The form -hod occurs: wifhod, 535, 1687, 2269, 2587; wyfhod, 207, 691; womanhod, 1041.

hepe (A.S. héap, *m.*, L. hæp, hep, *dat.* -e), to hepe, 2009 f (: lepe *inf.*).

heuene (A.S. heofon, *m.*, also L.W.S. heofone, *f.* Bright, s.v., L. heouene, heofne, O. heoffne, heffne), *nom.*, 1218 f; in heuene, 2329 f; to the ferste heuene, 2236 f; dissyllabic before a consonant, 2596 (*nom.*); heuene, 2, 6 (in h.), 1039 (*acc.*); Undyr the cope of heue that is aboue, 1527.

Rhyme words. — steuene *n.* (1218, 2329), nemene = neuene  
*pl. pr. I.* (2236).

hewe (A.S. héow, *n.*, W.S. hī(e)w; cf. Sievers, § 250, n. 3, Sweet, 1789; L. heowe, O. hew, inn hewe), *nom.*, 1761 f; *acc.*, 162 f; frosch of hewe, 57 f; hewe, 1159; hew (+ vowel), 1748, 2649.

Rhyme word. — newe *adj.*

hors (A.S. hors, *n.*, L. hors, an horse, to horse), 932 (+ vowel); to hors, 1193 (+ vowel).

house (A.S. hūs, *n.*), see § 18.

kne (A.S. cnéo(w), *n.*), see § 16.

lyue (A.S. lif, *n.*, L. lif, on liue, bi life, bi liue, O. lif, *dat.* lif, -e), a lyue, 1792 f (: ryue *inf.*); in al his lyue, 424 f (: blyue *adv.*) in al hese lyue, 1099 f (: describe *inf.*).

lyf, *nom.*, † 1239 f, 1700 f; *acc.*, † 1246 f, 1323 f, 1541 f, 2001 f, 2088 f, 2595 f, 2698 f, 880, 2278; *phrases*: made the lyf also of Seint Cecile, 416; al hire lyf, 1576 f (*acc. of time*); aftyr hire lyf, 509 f; fro his lyf, 2693 f; in his lyf, 2572 f; the keye of al myn hertis lyf, 2298 f; vpon thyn lyf, 538 f.

In the following the -e is probably not to be pronounced:

But he schal makyn as ȝe wele deuyse

Of wemen trewe in louynge al here lyue

Wher so ȝe wele of maydyn or of wyue. — 427-9.

Rhyme words. — knyf *n.* (2001, 2595, 2693), wif *n.* (509, 538, 1323, 1541, 1576, 1700, 2698), wyf *n.* (1239, 1246, 2088, 2298, 2572).

orde (A.S. ord, *m.*, L. O. ord, A.R., O. & N., *dat.* orde), vpon his speris orde, 645 f (: over borde).

schryfte (A.S. scrift, *m.*, L. scrift, *dat.* -e, O. shrifte), *nom.*, 745 f (: clyfte *n.*).

schryne (A.S. scrin, *n.*), *acc.*, 672 f (: fyne *adj. pl. post.*); schryne, *acc.*, 675.

shepe (A.S. scip, *n.*), to shepe, cf. § 18.

slepe (A.S. slæp, *m.*, L<sup>a</sup>. on slæpe, L<sup>b</sup>. a-slepe, O. slæp, o slæpe), a slepe, 537 f, 2678 f; a slepē, 2171, 2175; a slepe, 531; a slepe, 103.

slep : of (= *from*) slep (+ *vowel*), 544; in myn slep (+ *cons.*), 1171, 1296; with (= *by*) slep (+ *cons.*), 2182.

Rhyme words. — kepe *inf.* (537), wepe *inf.* (2678).

sothe (A.S. sōð), for sothe, cf. § 18.

steuene (A.S. stefn, stemn, *m.*, L<sup>a</sup>. stefne, L<sup>b</sup>. stemne, O. steffne), 1218 f, 2329 f (: heuene).

stronde (A.S. strond, strand, L<sup>a</sup>. strond, *dat.* stronde, L<sup>b</sup>. stronde, O. o þe strande, upp o þe strande), to the strondē, 2189, is perhaps doubtful; the verse reads in all the best MSS. :

And to the stronde barefot faste she went[e].

If *faste* is dissyllabic (as usually, but cf. 2487), the final -e of *stronde* is not sounded; but this makes the verse harsh. The allowance of an extra syllable before the cæsura gives no help here.

on the stronde, 2205 ; endëlong the stronde, 1498 f ( : stonde *inf.*).

temple (A.S. tempel, *n.*), 1019, 1024, 1052 ; -e, 1016, 1036, 1270, 2376.

[tounē] (A.S. tún, *m.*), see § 18.

wepnē (A.S. wæpen, *n.*), *acc.*, 2010 ; wepene, *acc.*, 1994 ; wepne, *nom.*, 2140.

weye (A.S. weg, *m.*, L<sup>a</sup>. wæi, wai, wei, weie, L<sup>b</sup>. wai, way ; *dat.* L<sup>a</sup>. waie, waiȝe, etc., L<sup>b</sup>. weie, waye, O. weȝe), by ony weye, 483 f ( : preye *inf.*) ; in hire weye, 1496 f ( : pleye *inf.*). G. has *weyē* in 1777, but the line is probably corrupt ; Tr. B. A12. insert *then* after *weye*, Fx. S. insert *than* (= then), Tn. Th. read *that he hath*, Ag. A 28. have : And all alone his way he hath I-nome. — weye, in his w., 826 ; by the w., 945 ; *acc.*, 2017, 2206, 2481. weye, in his w., 1484 ; *acc.*, 822, 1018, 2463. wey, *acc.*, 2174 f ( : lay 3 *s. pt. I.*), 485 ; a twenty deueleweye, 2177. furlongwey, 165, 233 ; furlongweye, 841.

weyghte (A.S. gewiht, *n.*, also gewihte, *n.* (Sweet, 896), L<sup>a</sup>. wiht (+ *vowel*), G. & E. wiȝte), of large weyghte, 1118 f ( : be nyghte). wile (A.S. wīl, *or* wīle, *n.*), 1439 f ( : yle *n.*).

wyue (A.S. wif, *n.*, L<sup>a</sup>. wif, wiue, L<sup>b</sup>. wif, wifue, L<sup>a</sup>. to wife, L<sup>b</sup>. to wifue, O. wif, to wife), to wyue, 1304, 1319 ; of (= *concerning*) wyue, 429 f ( : al here lyue).

wif, *nom.*, 1322 f, 1701 f, 2699 f, 615 (+ *vowel*), 663 (+ *cons.*) ; *acc.*, 594 f, 1540 f, 2152 (+ *vowel*) ; of this wif, 508 f, 539 f ; as for his wif, 1577 f.

Rhyme words. — stryf *n.* (594), lyf *n.* (*the rest*).

ȝote (A.S. gæt, W.S. geat, *n.*, L. ȝæt, ȝet, ȝæte, ȝate, O. ȝate), at the ȝotē (+ *cons.*).

ȝere (A.S. géar, gær, gér, *n.*, L. ȝer, *dat.* -e, O. ȝer), in ȝer be ȝere, 471 f ( : here *adv.*) ; ȝer be ȝer, 1958 f ( : matyr) ; but also fro ȝer to ȝer (+ *vowel*), 1926, from ȝer to ȝer (+ *cons.*), 1941.

§ 15. The following nouns (chiefly Germanic), for which no corresponding Anglo-Saxon etymons can be cited, sometimes or always end in *L. G. W.* in -e :

(A) Suspicious or uncertified Anglo-Saxon words, — *clyfte* (see the word), *mone* (A.S. \* mán, inferred from *mēnan*). (B)

Words from Old Norse : (i.) masculine *n*-stems, — *banke*, *bole* (but cf. A.S. *bulluc*), *ffelawe* (but cf. A.S. *feolaga*, itself from O.N.); (ii.) feminine *n*-stem, — *scherte*; (iii.) neuter *n*-stem, — *window*; (iv.) neuter *o*-stem, — *lofte*. (C) Probable Middle English formations from Anglo-Saxon words, — *drede*, *hede*. (D) Borrowed from Middle Low German, — *myte*. (E) Miscellaneous words of more or less doubtful etymology, — *bente*, *cog*, *curre*, *gonne*, *haste*, *mase*, *swolw*, *wer*.

*banke* (cf. O.N. *bakki*. Sweet gives a form *banki*; but when *-kk* was still *-nk*, *-i* must have been *-e*), 1471.

*bente* (cf. A.S. *beonet*, *m.*, which seems not to be the same word, see Mätzner and Murray, s.v.), 234 f (: *mente*, *pl. pr. I.*).

[*bolë*] (cf. O.N. *boli*; but A.S. *bulluc*, or *bulluca* (see B.-S., Sweet, Murray, Ettm., B.-T., s.v.) seems to point to some A.S. etymon for *bull*, and there is difficulty in the derivation of Modern English *bull* from *bole*, cf. Murray, s.v.), 1437 (+ *vowel*); but metre and 1432 require *boles*, the reading of the other MSS.

*bone* (O.N. *bón*, *bén*; cf. A.S. *bén*), see § 9.

*clyfte* (usually referred to some unknown Scandinavian source, cf. Skeat, s.v. *cleft*. Sweet gives *ge-clyfte* as an A.S. noun with a reference to the Boulogne Glosses, where *geclyfte* translates the adj. *sectilem*. The exact reference is Prud., *Peri steph.*, x, 147. On the basis of this adj. may we not restore a noun \**clyft*, *f.*? Cf. also Murray, s.v. *cleft*), 744 f (: *schryfte*); *clyftë*, 740; *clyft[ë]*, 746; *clyft* (+ *vowel*), 776.

*cog* (cf. M.L.G. *kogge*, O.F. *cogue*, see Murray, s.v.) 1481; *Sel.* is the only other MS. that spells this word without the final *-ge*.  
*curre* (cf. Swed. *kurre*, O.D. *korre*), 382.

*drede* (M.E. *dreden*, *vb.*; L<sup>a</sup>. *dred*, *drede*, L<sup>b</sup>. *drede*, P.Pl. *dre(e)de*), 454 f, 860 f, 2020 f, 2095 f, 2216 f; *dred[ë]*, 1422; *drede*, 1814, 2685; *dred* (+ *vowel*), 183, 664, 2586; *but dredë*, 854, 1728.

Rhyme words. — *de(e)de n.* (454, 860), *kynrede n.* (2095), *lede inf.* (2020), *rede inf.* (2216).

*ffelawe* (A.S. *féolaga*, *m.*, *Chron.*, ed. Plummer, p. 152; from O.N. *félagi*, *m.*), 895.

*gonne* (Celtic? cf. Sheldon, s.v. *gun*), 636 f (: *sunne n.*).

*hastë* (cf. Dutch *haast*, O. Fris. *hast*, Dan. Sw. *hast*; *hæst* seems

secured in A.S. by *Rid.* 16, 28; cf. also *hæstne hād*, *Beow.* 1336, *hæste*, *adv.*), 794.

*hede* (cf. O.Fris. *hûde*, *hôde*, O.H.G. *huota*; P.Pl<sup>b</sup>. *hede*), 1264;

*hed*, (+ *vowel*) 343, 1504, (+ *cons.*) 814, 2633.

*husbonde* (A.S. *húsbunda*, -*banda*; from O.N. *húsbóndi*), cf. § 1.

*lofte* (A.S. on *lofte* (Napier, *M. L. N.*, V, 278, Kluge, Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 786); from O. Norw., O. Icel. *loft*, *n.*, later Icel. *lopt*), 2709 f (: *softe*, *adv.*).

*mase* (cf. O.N. *masast*, *vb.*, A.S. *amasod*, *pp.*), 2014.

*myte* (M.L.G. *mite*, M.D. *mijte*; coincides in form with A. S.), cf. § 3.

*mone* (A.S. \* *mán*, cf. *mænan*, *vb.*; O. & N., P.Pl<sup>c</sup>. *mone*), 1799 f, 2379 f; *mone*, 1169.

Rhyme word. — *alone*.

*scherte* (A.S. *scyrte*, *f.*; from O.N. *skyrta*, *f.*; L. *scurte*, P.Pl<sup>c</sup>. *sherte*), 390 f; *sherte*, 2629 f.

Rhyme word. — *herte n.*

*swolw* (cf. M.D. *swelgh*, M.L.G. *swelch*, O.N. *svelgr*, A.S. *swelgan*, *sweolgan*), 1104 (+ *vowel*).

*thral* (A.S. *þræl*; cf. O.N. *þræll*), cf. § 18.

*wawë* (cf. O.N. *vagr. m.*), *dat.*, 2416.

*wer* (cf. Scotch *weir*, and see Skeat, *Minor Poems, Glossary*), 2686 f (: *ther adv.*): G. has *this awer*, but *swich a wer* (the reading of Fx. Tr. Th. and B.) is certainly correct.

*window* (O.N. *vindauga*; P.Pl. *windowe*), (+ *vowel*) 1784, (+ *cons.*) 2709.

Note.—From the past participle *iswogen* (cf. L. 3074) arose the form *a swoune* which was misunderstood as prep. + noun: cf. v. 2207, *a swoune*. Is not the origin of the noun *swō*, 1816, to be found in the same *pp.* with the final -*n* apocopated?

§ 16. The following monosyllables may be put together: *dew* (*wo*-stem, *m.*, *n.*), *kne* (*wo*-stem, *n.*), *se* (*i*-stem, *m.*, *f.*), *tre* (*wo*-stem, *n.*), *wo* (A.S. *wá*, *intj.*).

*dew* (A.S. *déaw*, *m.*, *n.*, O. *dæw*), 775.

*hew* (A.S. *hí(e)w*), see § 14.

*kne* (A.S. *cneo(w)*, *n.*, L<sup>a</sup>. *cneo*, *cneowe*, L<sup>b</sup>. *cno(u)we*, O. o *cnewwe*, but pl. *cnes*), on *myn kne*, 445 f (: *he*); unto the *kne*, 973 f (: *sche*); vpon his *kne*, 2028 f (: *he*).



se (A.S. *sæ*, partly *m.*, partly *f.*, cf. Sievers, § 266, n. 3 ; L. *sæ*, se, O. *sæ*), 634, 792, 950, etc.

tre (A.S. *tréo(w)*, *n.*, North. *tré*, *tréo*, *tréu(o)*, Sievers, § 250, 2 ; L. *treo*, O. *treo*, *tre*), 109 f, 785 f, 2395 f ; 802.

Rhyme words. — *autorite n.* (2395), *be inf.* (109, 785).

wo (A.S. *wá*, *intj.*, cf. *wéa*, *wk. m.*, L. *wa*, O. *wa*, *waz*), *wo*, *acc.*, 287 ; *wo* is me, 60 ; in *wo* and *peyne*, 1330 ; from *wo* and *fromyschaunce*, 2435 ; for *wel[e]* or *wo*, 687, 1235 ; *prophete* of *wo*, 2254 ; *wo-begon*, 2409.

§ 17. In the following noun *-y* comes partly from the vocalization of an A.S. *-g*. Cf. also *wey* (§ 14), *lady*, *pley* (§ 5), and also *keye* (§ 9). *body* (A.S. *bodig*, *n.*, L. *bodi*, O. *bodiz*), 210, 843, 1281, 2551. In 1281 the final *-y* of *body* is slurred with the following *and*.

§ 18. The following masculine and neuter nouns, which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative, take no *-e* in *L. G. W.* even in the dative.

(i.) Masculine *o*-stems,<sup>1</sup> — (a) monosyllabic, *earm*, *æsc*, *bár*, *box*, *bræð*, *brægd*, *brond*, *ceorl*, *cláð*, (*m.*, *n.*), *cræft*, *dæg*, *dóm* (and compounds), *fox*, *forst*, *god*, *gást*, *heals*, *hearm*, *hægl*, *hód*, *hám*, *horn*, *hund*, *cyning*, *cnif*, *cniht*, *lust*, *lím*, *mæst*?, *múð*, *ðð*, *pæð*, *ram(m)*, *ræd*, *regn*, *hring*, *rocc*, *segl* (*m.*, *n.*), *scéaf*, *slæp*, *song*, *stæf*, *stán*, *storm*, *swan*, *tagl*, *ponc*, *péof*, *ge-poht*, *præð*, *præd*, *top(p)*, *weal(l)*, *wind*, *wir*, *wolf* ; (b) dissyllabic, *ancor*, *bridel*, *castel*, *déofol* (*m.*, *n.*), *fugol*, *heorot*, *hungor* (originally *u*-stem), *hláford*, *munuc*, *mónað* (original consonant-stem), *sadol*, *seoluc*, *punor*, *wimpel* ; (ii.) neuter *o*-stems, — (a) monosyllabic, *bæc*, *bát*, *blód*, *bræs*, *ceaf*, *clif*, *ceald*, *corn*, *déor*, *folc*, *for-bod*, *gold*, *gód*, *gærs*, *hors*, *hús*, *lond*, *leaf*, *los*, *hlot*, *leoht*, *rúm*, *riht*, *rím*, *ge-sceap*, *scip*, *sond*, *súð*, *sweord*, *ping*, *twín*, *weddlác*, *weorc*, *wæx*, *hwít*, *wif*, *wín*, *wit(t)*, *word*, *wrong* ; (b) dissyllabic, *godspel(l)*, *healoc*, *héafod*, *wæter*, *wundor* ; (iii.) masculine *jo*-stems, — *brid*, *pyt(t)* ; (iv.) neuter *jo*-stems, — *cyn(n)*, *net(t)* ; (v.) masculine *i*-stems, — *gist*, *glém*, *wyrm* ; (vi.) neuter *i*-stems, — *gefēr*, *flæs*, *flæsc* ; (vii.) masculine *u*-stems, — *sumor*, *winter* ; (viii.) masculine consonant stems, *féond*, *fréond*, *monn*

<sup>1</sup> *U*-stems that have in A.S. completely identified themselves with the *o*-declension are not here distinguished from *o*-stems.

(and compounds); (ix.) neuter consonant-stems, — *cild*, *ear*, *lomb*. (For *fæder*, etc., see the end of the list.)

anker (A.S. ancor, *m.*), 2501.

arm (A.S. earm, *m.*), *acc.*, 1817.

asch (A.S. æsc, *m.*), lyk an asch, 2649.

bak (A.S. bæc, *n.*), on his bak, 943.

blod (A.S. blód, *n.*), *nom.*, 851; *acc.*, 848, 874, 1539; *dat.*, 875; *partitive*, of myn herte blod, 2105.

boot (A.S. bát, *n.*), †\*2215.

bor (A.S. bár, *m.*), for wilde bor, 1121; with ony wilde bor, 980.

box (A.S. box, *m.*, Lat. *buxus*; but cf. Pogatscher, §§ 146, 148), 866 (*nom.*).

bras (A.S. bræs, *n.*), makyd al of bras, 1432 f (: was *pt. I.*).

breth (A.S. bræð, *m.*), *nom.*, 693 f, 2031 f; *acc.*, 1815 f, 2437 f.

Rhyme word. — deth *n.*

breyde (A.S. brægd, bræd, *m.*), *acc.*, 1166 f (: seyde *pp.*).

brid (A.S. brid, *m.*), *nom.*, 1757.

brydil (A.S. bridel, *m.*), *acc.*, 1208.

brond (A.S. brond, brand, *m.*), 2252 f (: wond 3 *s. pt. I.*), see § 43.

castel (A.S. castel, *m.*), 1507, 2335, 2378.

chaf (A.S. ceaf, cæf, *n.*), *acc.*, 529.

cherl (A.S. ceorl, *m.*), *acc.*, 124.

child (A.S. cild, *n.*), *nom.*, 2568, 2576; of the (his) child, 1142, 1935; vnto this child, 1147; 3eue myn child his lyf, 1323; with childe, 1323.

cloth (A.S. cláð, *n.*), *acc.*, 2368 f (: oth *n.*), 1332, 1336; *voc.*, 1338.

clyf (A.S. clif, *n.*), by the clyf (+ *cons.*), 1497.

cold (A.S. ceald, cald, *n.*), his swerd of cold, 115.

corn (A.S. corn, *n.*), *nom.*, 2579 f; *acc.*, 62 f, 312 f; of the corn, 529 f, 74.

Rhyme words. — born *pp.* (312, 2579); befor *adv.* (62, 529).

craft (A.S. cræft, *m.*), *acc.* 1607, 2591 f (: beraft *pp.*); of his craft, 1286; by no craft, 1749; be craf (+ *cons.*), 2528.

day (A.S. dæg, *m.*), 50, 132, 638, 1092, etc., etc.; holy day, 35 f (: May).

der (A.S. déor, *n.*), for der, 1121 f (: heroner *adj.*).

deth (A.S. déað, *m.*), see § 14.

- deuyl (A.S. *déofol*, *m. n.*), 2493; deuyl, 2227; a twenty deulewey, 2177; what d. have I with the knif to do, 2694.
- dom (A.S. *dóm*, *m.*), *acc.* (?), 2630 f (: com *s. pt. I.*). — fredom, of fredom, 1010, 1405, 1530; in fredom, 1127.
- er (A.S. *éar*, *n.*) *acc.*, 64 f (: ther *adv.*).
- ernest (A.S. *eornost*, *m.*; given as *f.* in B.-T., but cf. the quotations), in earnest (+ *cons.*) 1303; for earnest (+ *vowel*), 2703.
- fend (A.S. *féond*, *m.*), with the *f.*, 1996.
- fles (A.S. *flæs*, *n.*), *acc.*, 1435 f (: natheles *adv.*), 1428, 1595, 1647, 1651.
- flesch (A.S. *flæsc*, *n.*), *acc.*, 1539.
- folk (A.S. *folc*, *n.*), *nom.*, 1193, 1280, 2428; *acc.*, 251; (*with pl. attribute or verb*) *nom.*, 61, 2237, 2431; *acc.*, 1216, 1508; with alle these newe lusti folk, 1151; of his cuntrē folk, 2161.
- forbode (A.S. *forbod*, *n.*), *nom.* (?), 10; the other MSS. have: But God forbedē, *instead of* But Goddis forbode.
- foul (A.S. *fugol*, *m.*), *acc.*, 1390.
- fox (A.S. *fox*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1389 f (: box *n.*), 1393, 2448.
- frend (A.S. *fréond*, *m.*), *acc.*, 2156.
- frost (A.S. *forst*, *m.*), *nom.*, 2683.
- glem (A.S. *glæm*, *m.*), with the *g.*, 164.
- god (A.S. *god*, *m., n.*), *nom.*, 14, 158; *acc.*, 142, etc.
- gold (A.S. *gold*, *n.*), of *g.*, 158, 1118, 1122, 1200, 1428, 1208 f (: wold *pp.*); in *g.*, 1201; of goold (oo corrected), 147.
- good (A.S. *gód*, *n.*), *acc.*, 1182 f (: withstod *s. pt. I.*), 1175, 2467; for al the good, 2638.
- gospel (A.S. *godspel*(l), *n.*), *nom.*, 326.
- gost (A.S. *gást*, *gæst*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1295 f (: most *adv.*); *acc.*, 886 f (: bost *n.*).
- gras (A.S. *gærs*, *græs*, *n.*), vpon the . . . *g.* 225 f (: was *s. pt. I.*).
- halk (A.S. *healoc*, *m., n.* (?), into a priuie halk, 1780 f (: stalk *inf.*); most other MSS.: halke, stalke.
- hals (A.S. *heals*, *m.*), some were cut the hals, 292 f (: fals, *adj. pl. pred.*); no other MS. contains the verse.
- harm (A.S. *hearm*, *m.*), *acc.*, 358, 2385.
- hayl (A.S. *hægl*, *hagol*, *m.*), thikke as h., 655 f (: sayl *n.*); with h., 1220.

hed (A.S. héafod, *n.*), *acc.*, 882 f, 1817 f, 2344 f (: ded *adj. s.*); at hire beddys h., 1334; on his h., 160; maugre hire h., 2326.

hert (A.S. heorot, *m.*), for h., 1121.

hod (A.S. hód, *m.*), by myn h., 495 f (: good *adj. s.*).

hom (A.S. hám, *m.*), at h., (+ *cons.*), 824, 2036; (+ *vowel*), 2022; *advl.*, 96, 1241, 1270, 1619, 1651, 1942, 2216, 2307, 2481, 2621.

horn (A.S. horn, *n.*), *nom.*, 1383.

hors (A.S. hors, *n.*), see § 14.

hound (A.S. hund, *m.*), *nom.*, 1121.

hous (A.S. hús, *n.*), *nom.*, 2012, 2625; the h. of fame, 405; in his h. (+ *cons.*), 2619; in the (this) h. (+ *vowel*), 2141, 1554; out of the h. (+ *vowel*), 336; vnto the h. (+ *vowel*), 1778; to Colatynys h. (+ *vowel*), 1713; to house, 1546.

hungir (A.S. hungor, *m.*), *acc.*, 2006; for hungyr, 1278.

kyn (A.S. cyn(n), *n.*), How pitously compleynyth he his kyn, 1980 f (: In *prep.*).

kyng (A.S. cyning, cyng, *m.*), *nom.*, 356, 366, 421 f, 785; *acc.*, 1401; in *apposition*, 580 f, 1468 f, 1593 f, 1911 f.

Rhyme words. — thyng, *n.* (421), nouns in -yng (the rest).

knyf (A.S. cnif, *m.*), *acc.*, 2000 f, 2594 f, 2106, 2654; for a k., 2692 f; with a k., 2694.

Rhyme word. — lyf *n.*

knyght (A.S. cniht, *m.*), *nom.*, 1636 f, 1821 f, 2055 f, 1404, 1705, 2080; *acc.*, 607 f, 964; *voc.*, 684 f: with an hardy (this lusty) k., 1800 f, 1542 f; lyk a k., 1066 f; knght, *nom.*, 1948 f.

Rhyme words. — myght *n.* (1800), mygh *n. dat.* (1066), nyght *n. dat.* (684, 1542, 1636), ryght *n. dat.*, (607, 1821), bryght *adj. s. def. post.* (2055), ryght *adv.* (1948).

lamb (A.S. lomb, lamb, *n.*), *nom.*, 2318; lomb, *acc.*, 1798.

land (A.S. lond, land, *n.*), see § 14.

lef (A.S. léaf, *n.*), *nom.*, † 2613, 2648; *acc.*, 70, 77; of the l., 72; ageyn the l., 73 f (: shef *n.*).

leman (A.S. (léof-)mann, *m.*), *nom.*, 1772.

les (? A.S. léas, *adj.*), withoutyn ony l., 1022 f; with oute l., 1128 f; lees, *nom.*, 1545 f.

Rhyme words. — Achates (1022, 1128), Ercules (1545).

lodman (A.S. ládmonn, *m.*), of l., 1488.

lord (A.S. hláford, *m.*), *nom.*, 353, 356, 1821, 2244, 2479; *acc.*, 1060; for a l., 386 f (: word *n.*), 388.

los (A.S. los(s), *n.*), *nom.*, 997.

lot (A.S. hlot, *n.*), *nom.*, 1946; *acc.*, 1933.

lust (A.S. lust, *m.*), *nom.*, 1588, 1756; *acc.*, 32.

lyght (A.S. leoht, *n.*), *acc.*, 1163 f (: nyght, *n.*), 1779 f (: ryght *adv.*); lyzt, *nom.*, 54 f (: nyzt *n.*).

lym (A.S. lím, *m.*), ful of l., 649; thour thyn l., 765.

man (A.S. monn, mann, *m.*), 9, 303, 2194, etc., etc. In 2231 *man* rhymes with *beganne*, 2 *s. pt. I.*, — the only case worthy of note. gentilman, 1264, 1532.

mast (A.S. mæst, *m.*), by-hyndyn the m., 643.

monk (A.S. munuc, *m.*, L. Lat. monicus, for monachus, cf. Pogatscher, §§ 165, 166, 214, and the references in § 234), *nom.*, 16.

monyth (*monosyllable*) (A.S. mónað, *m.*), *nom.*, 89; for a m., 2273; in a m., 2477.

mouth (A.S. mūð, *m.*), *acc.*, 878; with (hire) bloody m., 807, 820.

net (A.S. net(t), *n.*), from the n., 119.

oth (A.S. áð, *m.*), *acc.*, 666 f (: wroth *adj. s.*), 1638 f (: loth *adj. s.*), 2369 f (: cloth *n.*), 1644.

path (A.S. pæð, *m.*), *acc.*, 2463.

pit (A.S. pyt(t), *n.*), in the p. 697; pet *acc.*, 678.

ram (A.S. ramm, *m.*), *nom.*, 1427.

red (A.S. ræd, réd, *m.*), *nom.*, 1987, 2024; *acc.*, 631; after myn r., 2645 f (: ded. *adj. s.*).

reyn (A.S. regn, *m.*), *nom.*, 2411 f (: I-leyn *pp.*), 1220.

roum (A.S. rúm, *n.*; *m.* in B.-T., but cf. the quotations), *acc.*, 1999.

ryght (A.S. riht, *n.*), *acc.*, 1392 f, 468; of hire r., 606 f; in (his) r., 2133 f, (+ *cons.*) 467; be r. (+ hym), 339; be right, 1820 f.

Rhyme words. — knyght (606, 1820), myght *n.* (2133), nyght *n.* (1392).

rym (A.S. rím, *n.*), In r. (+ *vowel*), 2516.

ryng (A.S. hring, *m.*), *acc.*, 2366.

rokke (A.S. stánrocc, *m.*), vpon a r., 2195.

sadyl (A.S. sadol, *m.*), with s., 1199.

sayl (A.S. segl, *m.*), *nom.*, 2412; *acc.*, 1459; seyl, *acc.*, 646; ffeleth ek the queene withal hire porpere sayl, 654 f (: hayl).

shap (A.S. *gesceap*, *n.*), *acc.*, 1747.

schip (A.S. *scip*, *n.*), *acc.*, 621, 1364; on to his *s.*, 1129; ship, *nom.*, 2407, 2417; *acc.*, 2166; to shepe, 633, 2174; to schepe, 628.

shef (A.S. *scēaf*, *m.*), *agen the s.*, 74 f (: *lef n.*).

silk (A.S. *seoluc*, *m.*, cf. Sheldon, s.v. silk), 159.

slep (A.S. *slæp*, *m.*), see § 14.

somyr (A.S. *sumor*, *m.*), in *s.*, 58.

sond (A.S. *sand*, *sond*, *n.*), in the *s.*, 828.

song (A.S. *sang*, *song*, *m.*), *acc.*, † 129; in here *s.*, 123; of *s.*, 1101, 2255; with *s.*, 2674 f (: long *adj. s.*).

[south] (A.S. *súð*, *adj.*), out of the souht, 93.

staf (A.S. *stæf*, *m.*), *acc.*, 2000.

stere (A.S. *stéor*, *n.*), see § 2.

ston (A.S. *stán*, *m.*), still as ony *s.*, 236; than ony *s.*, 2554 f (: anon *adv.*); thour thyn *s.*, 765 f (: gon *inf.*); of *s.*, 768 f (: gon *inf.*); vpon a *s.*, 2207 f (: I-gon *pp.*); ston wal, 713.

storm (A.S. *storm*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1766, 2508. In the latter the other MSS. have the better reading, *streme*.

strond (A.S. *strand*, *strond*, *m.*), see § 14.

swan (A.S. *swan*, *swon*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1355 f (: began 3 *s. pt. I.*).

sword (A.S. *sweord*, *n.*), *acc.*, 889, 2000; with his (3oure) *s.*, 1115, 1321, 2334.

tayl (A.S. *tægl*, *tægel*, *m.*), with his *t.*, 379.

thank (A.S. *þanc*, *þonc*, *m.*), *nom.*, 442.

thef (A.S. *þeof*, *m.*), *nom.*, † 1659, 2330 f (: myschef, *n.*). In 1659 all the other MSS., except Tr., Ag. A12. A28., read *chef*, *adj.*, for *thef and*, an improvement in every respect.

thyng (A.S. *þing*, *n.*), *nom.*, 14; *acc.*, 330 f, 440 f; of al this *th.*, 2101 f; wel more *th.*, *acc.*, 11; his *th.*, *pl.* (?), 2140; euery *th.*, *acc.*, 12; thyng, *nom.*, 2219 f; *acc.*, 2233 f.—nothyng, *nom.*, 1494.

Rhyme words.—kyng (420), hom comyng *n.* (2101), compleynyng *n.* (2219), doinge *n.* (2233), ymagynyng *n.* (330).

thought (A.S. *geþoht*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1195 f; *acc.*, 1783 f; in *th.* 2542; in myn (thyn, 3oure) *th.*, 1172 f, 2015 f, 2228 f; in his thouȝt, 353 f.

Rhyme words.—brought, braught *pp.* (1195, 1983), (I-)wrou(g)ht *pp.* (353, 1172, 2015, 2228), nought *pr.* (1324).

thral (A.S. *þræl*, *m.*, cf. O.N. *þræll*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1313; *acc.* (*pl. l.*), 1940 f (: *shal 3 s. pr. I.*).

thred (A.S. *þræd*, *préd*, *m.*), *acc.*, 2018.

thundyr (A.S. *þunor*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1219.

top (A.S. *top(p)*, *m.*), *ffrom* the *t.*, 639.

toun (A.S. *tún*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1591, 1942; *acc.*, 1007; *vnto* the *t.*, 586; of *romë t.*, 211 f; of all the *t.*, 1016 f; at *romë t.*, 1691; out of this *t.*, 1727 f; in *oure* (this noble) *t.*, 43 f, 710 f.

Rhyme words. — *adoun adv.* (1727), nouns in *-oun* (the rest).

twyn (A.S. *twín*, *n.*), of *t.*, 2016.

wal (A.S. *weal(l)*, *m.*), *nom.*, 737; *voc.*, 756 f; in the *w.*, 1962; of that *w.*, 750; on the *w.*, 1025 f, 1971 f; *vpon* the *w.*, 1908 f; cf. *ston wal*.

Rhyme words. — *al adj. s.* (1908, 1971), *al adv.* (756), over *al adv.* (1025).

watyr (A.S. *wæter*, *n.*), *nom.* 852.

wedlek (A.S. *wedlác*, *n.*), *acc.*, 295.

werk (A.S. *weorc*, *n.*), *nom.*, 79; in *swich a w.*, 891.

werin (A.S. *wyrin*, *m.*), 244.

wex (A.S. *wæx*, *weahs*, *n.*), of *wex*, 2004.

whit (A.S. *hwít*, *adj.*), with *w.*, (+ *vowel*), 174, 520.

wif (A.S. *wíf*, *n.*), see § 14.

wympil (A.S. *wimpel*, *m.*), *acc.*, 813, 888; to that *w.*, 845; *wympil*, *voc.*, 847; *wympyl*, *acc.*, 819.

wyn (A.S. *wín*, *n.*), *nom.*, 1110; with the *w.*, 1095.

wynd (A.S. *wind*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1364, 1365, 1460, 2177, 2411.

wyntyr (A.S. *winter*, *m.* (*n. in n. and a. pl.*, cf. Sievers, § 273, n. 3)), in *w.*, 58, 121; of *w.*, 114.

wyr (A.S. *wír*, *m.*), with a *lityl w.*, 1205.

wit (A.S. *wit(t)*, *n.*), *nom.*, 29, 537, 1420, 1752, 1797; *acc.*, 2663; in his (*thyn*) *w.*, 258, 1414; out of his *w.*, 660.

wolf (A.S. *wulf*, *m.*), *nom.*, 1798; of (= *by*) the *w.*, 2318.

woman (A.S. *wífmann*, *m.*), *nom.*, 304, 923, 1043; *weman*, *nom.*, 2713; *acc.*, 1305.

wondir (A.S. *wundor*, *n.*), *nom.*, 1147; *wondyr*, *nom.*, 513, 656.

word (A.S. *word*, *n.*), with that *w.*, 696, 845; of only goodly *w.*, 65; withoute answer or *w.*, 387 f (: *lord n.*).

wrong (A.S. *wrang*, *wrong*, *n.*), in *ryght ne wr.*, 467.

The five Anglo-Saxon kinship nouns in *-r*, *fæder*, *módor*, *bróðor*, *sweostor*, *dohtor*, —

fadyr (A.S. *fæder*, *m.*), 1148, 2633; *voc.*, 2329; *acc.*, 1666, 2178; with last syllable slurred before a vowel: *acc.*, 944, lyk his *f.*, 2446; ffodyr, *app. acc.*, 1828.

modyr (A.S. *módor*, *f.*), *nom. app.*, 999; *acc. app.*, 1828; of his *m.*, 1141.

brothir (A.S. *bróðor*, *m.*), *nom.*, 2392 *f.*, 2570; *voc.*, 2315; of his *faderis b.*, 2608 *f.*; *brothyr*, *acc.*, 1398.

Rhyme word. — othyr.

systyr (A.S. *sweostor*, *f.*, probably influenced by O.N. *systir*), *nom.*, 986, 1970; *voc.* 1978, 2126; *vnto myn* (hire) *s.*, 1168, 2096; *to myn syster*, 2087; *systir*, *nom.*, 1182; *sistyr*, *voc.*, 1170; *acc.*, 2152, *to hire s.*, 2125; *sustyr*, *acc.*, 592; *systeryn* (*mistake for syster*), *to hire s.*, 1977.

doughter (A.S. *dohtor*, *f.*), *nom.*, 1598, 1969, (*app.*) 2425; *acc.*, 2297, 2299, 2572; *doughtyr*, *nom.*, 1468, 1661, 1908; *acc.*, 717, 2247, 2281, 2574.

§ 19. The following nouns of Germanic origin, which have no substantives to represent them in Anglo-Saxon, end in *L. G. W.* in a consonant :

bekyr (cf. O.N. *bikarr*, *m.*), 2661 *f.* (: *sekyr adj. s. pred.*).

bost (etym. dub.), 887 *f.* (: *gost*, *n.*), 221.

box (etym. dub.), 1388 *f.* (: *fox*, *n.*).

cog (cf. M.L.G. *kogge*, *m. f.*, M. Du. *cogghe f.*; also O.F. *cogue*, see Murray, s.v.), in a c. (+ *cons.*), 1481.

dræf (cf. O.N. *draf*, *n.*; but see Skeat, s.v. *draff*), 312.

draught (cf. O.N. *drátt*; but see Skeat and Sheldon, s.v.), 2667.

hap (cf. O.N. *happ*, *m.*), 1773.

kep (cf. A.S. *cépan*, *vb.*), 1733 *f.* (: *wep 3 s. pt. I.*)

lak (cf. Du. *lak*; see also Sweet, 277), 1534, 298 *f.* (: *pak n.*).

lok (cf. A.S. *lócian*, *vb.*), 1605.

pak (cf. Du. *pak*), 299 *f.* (: *lak n.*).

skille (O.N. *skil*, *n.*), 1382.

slet (etym. dub.), 1220.

tow (cf. A.S. *towlíc*, *tow-hús*, apud Skeat, s.v., and *tow myderce*, *Dip. Angl.*, p. 538), 2004.



tydyng (cf. O.N. *tíðindi*, *m.*), 1424.

won (etym. ?), (a) ful gret won, 1652 f (: gon *pp.*), 2161 f (: anon *adv.*).

§ 20. In Romance nouns final *-e* (*e* mute) is usually retained, both in writing and in sound, except for the regular elision. But there are a good many exceptions, in some of which the *-e* is preserved in writing but loses its value as a syllable, in others of which the *-e* is neither written nor pronounced. (Cf. Child, § 19; ten Brink, §§ 222, 223.)

For details see the following sections (§§ 21-31). — § 21. Miscellaneous Romance nouns in *-e* which sometimes or always retain *-e* in *L. G. W.* § 22. Exceptions to § 21. § 23. *-aunce*. § 24. *-ence*. § 25. *-esse*. § 26. *-ice*. § 27. *-ure*. § 28. *-dre*. § 29. *chambre*, *lettre*, etc. § 30. *-ye*. § 31. *glòrye*, *stòrye*, etc.

§ 21. Miscellaneous Romance nouns in *-e* (*e* mute) which sometimes or always retain *-e* in *L. G. W.*

age, 727, 728 f (: *maryage*); age, 1399.

asege, 2410; cf. sege.

barge, 2196, 620 f, 2150 f, 2361 f, 2407 f; barge, 2201, 2160.

Rhyme words. — charge *n.* (620), charge *inf.* (2150), large *adj.* (2361, 2407).

batayle, 1647 f, 2111 f (: *fayle inf.*); batayle, 1631.

braunche, 2681.

cape, 1527; cop (+ *vowel*), 738.

cause, cf. § 22.

caue, 2312, 2362, 1225 f (: *saue inf.*): kave (corrected), 2311; caue, 1244; caue, 811.

charge, 620 f (: *barge*), 2514 f (: *large adj.*); charge, 2383.

compleynt, 874 f (: *pente inf.* = *paint*), (+ *vowel*), 748.

corage, 1451 f (: *viage n.*); corage, 383.

corde, † 2485 f (: *recordith for recorde pl. pr. I.*).

couche, 99.

custome, 1943.

damage, 598 f (: *rage n.*).

dòctrine, 19.

doute, 367, 721 f, 1613 f, 1932 f, 2502 f (: *aboute*).

egle, 2319.

ensaumple (3 syll.), 464, 2560; ensaumple, 1394.

entente, 461 f (: mente 3 s. *pt. I.*), 1149 f (: sente 3 s. *pt. I.*);

entent, 139 f (: ment 3 *pl. pt. I.*), 78, 85.

erbe, 109.

erytage, 1666 f (: vassellage); cf. herytage.

esę, cf. § 22.

fable, 702 f (: stable).

face, 163; 2504 f (: place *n.*), 2706 f (: embrace *inf.*); face, 162, 797, 2446.

faile, 1092 f (: vitayle *inf.*).

fame, 1423; 405 f (: name *n.*); fame, 1242.

feste, 616, 1098, 2251; 2302 f (: the leste); feste, 1100; feste (+ to be), 2249.

force, 2324.

forme, 1768, 1769; forme, 1582, 1583.

fortune, cf. § 22.

geste, 87 f (: leste *imp. pr. S.*).

gomme, 109.

gyde, 969 f (: ryde *inf.*)

grace, 2285, 2401, 2433, 2457; 423 f, 441 f, 663 f, 1014 f, 1731 f, 2039 f, 2063 f, 2605 f; grace, 468, 1804, 1947, 2084.

Rhyme words. — space *n.* (441), trace *pr. n.* (423), place *n.* (the rest).

herbe, cf. erbe.

herytage, 2036 f (: page *n.*); cf. erytage.

yle, 2167, 1438 f (: wile *n.*); ile, 1466; yle, 1463, 2163; yldę, 1425.

ymage, 1760.

ympne, 410.

ynke, 2491 f (: swynke *inf.*).

yre, 324; yre, 397.

Ioye, 1059; 1104 f, 1150 f, 1252 f (: Troye *pr. n.*); Ioye, 2, 128, 1284, 1578, 1966.

Iuste, 1115; some MSS. have *Iustyng*.

lanterne, 926.

legende, 473 f (: spende *inf.*), 1689 f (: comende 3 *pl. pr. I.*), 2456 f (: sende 3 s. *pr. S.*); legende, 539, 545.

lynage, 2602 f (: *maryage n.*); lynage, 1820, 2526.  
 madame, cf. § 22.  
 maryage, 729 f (age), 2603 f (: *lynage*), 2616 f (: *vsage*).  
 massage, 1297, 1486.  
 noyse, 1790.  
 our, 682 f (: *your adj. s.*), (+ *vowel*) 103.  
 page, 2093; 2037 f (: *herytage*); page, 2061.  
 penne, 2357; *in pennëful*, 2491.  
 peple, 235, 361.  
 perle, 153.  
 persdne, 347, 610.  
 peyne, 215 f (: *desteyne inf.*), 419 f (: *Maudeleyne*), 1237 f  
 (: *pleyne inf.*), 1330 f (: *Lauyne*), 2488 f (: *tweyne num.*),  
 \* 2524 f (: *pleyne inf.*); peyne, 2, 1376.  
 pilgrymage, 2375 f (: *rage n.*).  
 place, 839, 2112; 2505 f (: *face n.*), 662 f, 1015 f, 1730 f, 2038 f,  
 2062 f, 2664 f (: *grace n.*), 747 f, 1915 f (: *pace inf.*), 232 f,  
 1998 f (: *space n.*); place, 2615.  
 pduerte, cf. § 22.  
 preue, 2113; 28 f (*leue inf.*), 84 (*beleue inf.*); pref (+ *vowel*),  
 528; prof (+ *vowel*), 2394.  
 prophete, 2254; also A.S. profëta.  
 prose, 413.  
 rage, 598 f (: *damage n.*), 2374 f (: *pilgrymage*).  
 reame, 1281; reume, 2091.  
 regne, 1401, 1413; reyne, 992.  
 requeste, 438 f (: *leste impr. pr. S.*).  
 rose, cf. § 3.  
 route, 1197 (: *aboute*).  
 sege, 1909; sege, 1758; sege (+ *how*), 1725; cf. asege.  
 sekte, 1382; of the other MSS. only Ag. has *secte*, Fx. B. *sleight(e)*,  
 Tn. *seite*, S. Tr. *set(t)*, Th. *disceyte*, A28. *seeyte*.  
 sygne, 1743 f (: *dygne adj.*); signe, 2223.  
 syre, 2492 f (: *a fere = a-fire*); sire, 386, 1706; sere, 240; sere,  
 245, 340, 493.  
 somme, 1559.  
 space, 233 f, 1999 f (: *place n.*), 440 f (: *grace n.*).

stable, 1807.  
 terme, 1637, 2499, 2510.  
 torchē, 2419.  
 trompe, 635.  
 vsage, 2617 f ( : maryage ) ; vsage, 2337 ; cf. vsaunce, § 23.  
 value, 602 ( : dewe *adj.* ).  
 vassellage, 1667 f ( : erytage ).  
 viage, 1450 f ( : corage ).  
 visage, 1070.  
 vitayle, 1488 f ( : fayle *inf.* ).

§ 22. Exceptions to § 21.

baladē (O.F. balade), 202 ; baladē, 224.  
 bestē (O.F. beste), 1937 ; 382 f ( : areste *n.* ), 980 f ( : foreste *n.* ) ;  
 best, 807 f, 1928 f ( : arest *n.* ), 843 f ( : forest *n.* ) ; bestē, 1998,  
 2008, 2019, 2147, 2149, 2159 ; bestē, 1094, but the other MSS.  
 read : Ful many a best she to the shippes sente.  
 carolē (O.F. carole), in carolē wise, 201 ; carolē, 687.  
 causē (O.F. cause), 1684 ; cause, 395, 895, 1592, 2133.  
 corone (O.F. corone), 229, 521, 2224 ; cōrene, 152 ; cōroun, 154,  
 515, 517 ; cōrdne, 148 ; coroun, 155, the white coroun, *or* the  
 whitē coroun.  
 esē (O.F. aise), 1099 ; esē, 1112.  
 fortune (O.F. fortune), 1044 ; fortune, 589, 1609 ; fortune, 1340.  
 goter (O.F. goutiere), (+ *vowel*) 2705.  
 lauender (O.F. lavendiere), (2 *syll.* ; + *vowel*) 334.  
 madamē (O.F. ma dame), 446 ; madamē, 433.  
 pouerte (O.F. povertē), 2065.  
 rebel (O.F. rebelle), Rebel vnto the town of rome is he, 591.  
 reuel, 2255, 2674.  
 stāmyn (O.F. estamine), In a stamyn large, 2360.  
 tempest (O.F. tempeste), (+ *cons.*), 1240, 1475, 2414 ; (+ *vowel*),  
 962, 1056, 1224, 1280.  
 tixt (O.F. texte), (+ *cons.*) 254 ; (+ *vowel*) 86.

§ 23. Nouns in -aunce.

Final -e seems not to count as a syllable in these words  
 except in rhyme ; cf. *myschaunce*, *penaunce*, *plesaunce*, *rèmem-*

*braunce*, *sustenaunce*, and *vengeaunce*. For convenience, *chaunce*, *daunce* are included in this list.

All rhyme-words are given except nouns in *-aunce*.

*aparaunce*, 1372 f. — *chaunce*, 1045 f. — *cheuysau[n]ce*, 2434 f. — *cuntenaunce*, 2076 f; *cuntenaunce*, 1742. — *dalyaunce*, 332 f. — *daunce*, 687 f, 2255 f. — *gouernaunce*, 1044 f. — *myschaunce*, 1826; 333 f, 1609 f, 2254 f, 2435 f. — *mountenaunce*, 233, *for mountaunce*. — *obeysaunce*, 1375; *obeysaunce*, 587 f (: *vsagee*, *mistake for vsaunce*), 2479 f. — *obseruaunce*, 1608 f. — *ordenaunce*, 2478 f. — *penaunce*, 469, 481, 489; 2077 f. — *plesaunce*, 1770; 1373 f, 1477 f; *plesaunce*, 1150, 1446, 1769. — *puruyaunce*, 1561 f. — *remembraunce*, 26; 686 f; *remembrauns* (+ *vowel*), 518. — *substaunce*, 1560 f. — *sustenaunce*, 2041. — *vsauce*, 1476 f; *vsagee for vsaunce*, 586 f (: *obeysaunce*). — *vengeaunce*, *3if hire vengeaunce falle on 3ow therfore*, 2523.

#### § 24. Nouns in *-ence*.

This ending always rhymes with itself. There is only one instance of a sounded final *-e* in the interior of the verse, *conciencie*, 2586; on the other hand, there is no instance of apocope. (Cf. ten Brink, § 223.)

*conciencē*, 2586; 1255 f. — *credence*, 20; 31 f, 81 f. — *defence*, 182 f, 1931 f; *diffens* (+ *vowel*), 606. — *excellence*, 2049 f. — *innocence*, 345; 1254 f. — *neglygence*, 525 f. — *presence*, 242; 181 f, 524 f, 1930 f, 2048 f. — *reuerence*, 32 f, 82 f.

#### § 25. (I.) Abstract nouns in *-esse*. (II.) Feminine nomina agentis in *-esse*.

Nouns in *-esse* commonly rhyme with nouns in *-esse* or *-nesse*. All other rhyme words are indicated. (I.) Apocope occurs in *richesse* (1253). (II.) Apocope occurs in *goddessē* (989); final *-e* is sounded in *ostessē* (2496).

I. *destresse*, 664 f; *distresse*, 1055 f, 1081 f, 1919 f. — *gentillesse*, 1010; 610 f, 1080 f. — *humblesse*, 2269. — *richesse*, 1253; 1100 f.

II. *cūtesse*, 488. — *duchesse*, 406 f (: *gesse* *1 s. pr. I.*), 2122 f. *goddessē* (*hybrid word*), 989; 987 f (: *gesse* *1 s. pr. I.*). —

hunteresse (*hybrid word*), 971 f. — lyonesse, 817, 861; lyones, 805 f (: dres *inf.*). — ostessë, 2496; most of the other MSS. transpose *ostesse* and *thyn*, which leaves *ostesse* trisyllabic as before; this is avoided in Tr. by the insertion of *thou* before *Demophon*, so also in S., which, however, has *hestis* for *ostesse*.

§ 26. Nouns in *-yce, -yse*.

For apocope, see *maleyce*, *sacryfise*, and *seruise*.

coueytise, 124 f (: despise *inf.*). — empyse, 617 f, 1452 f (: deuyse *inf.*). — gyse, 105 f (: deuyse *inf.*); cf. wise, § 3. — Iustise, 366 f (: offise *n.*). — malyce, 341 f (: nyce *adj.*); maleyce, 2590; mǎleyce, 2307; mǎleyce, 1720, 2595; mǎleys (+ *cons.*), 351. — nōrice, 1346. — offise, 367 f (: Iustise *n.*). — sacryfise, 1350; 1310 f (: deuyse *ger.*). — sèruise, 2033. — vice, 463 f (: cheryse *inf.*).

§ 27. Nouns in *-ure*.

For apocope, see *aventure*, 1051; for *-ë* before a consonant, see *cryaturë*, 2164. Except as indicated, nouns in the following list rhyme only with each other.

auenture, 657 f, 2032 f (: endure *inf.*), 909 f (: assure *inf.*), 177 (: cure *n.*); auenture 1614; auenture, 1051. — cryature, 1632 f (: assure *inf.*); cryatur[ë], 2164. — cure, 1145 f, 1176 f. — nature, 975 f, 2447 f, 2690 f. — scripture, 1144 f. — sepulture, 2553. — stature, 2446 f. — uesture, 2691 f.

§ 28. Nouns in *-ere*.

Here are put, for convenience, *chere*, *manere*, *matere*, *preyere*, *panter*[e] (O.F. *pantere*, *pantiere*).

chere, 183 f, 219 f, 1146 f, 1386 f, 1741 f, 1762 f, 2079 f, 2124 f, 2269 f, 2452 f, 2626 f; cheere, 700 f, 869 f, 1248 f, 1374 f, 1746 f, 2246 f, 2672 f; chiere, 1421, 1505 f.

Rhyme words. — de(e)re *adj.* (700, 869, 2246), dere *adv.* (1386), here *inf.* (183, 1146, 1248, 2246), in fere (219), manere *n.* (1505, 1374, 1746, 1762, 2079, 2124, 2452, 2672), here *adv.* (1741), preyere *n.* (2269).

manere, 205 f, 772 f, 991 f, 1084 f, 1375 f, 1747 f, 1763 f, 2060 f, 2078 f, 2125 f, 2417 f, 2453 f, 2673 f; manyere, 1504 f, (chiere

*n.*) ; màner (+ *vowel*), 1909 ; màner (+ *hire*, which some MSS. omit), 2372.

Rhyme words. — che(e)re *n.* (*see above*), clere *adj. pl.* (205), cleere *inf.* (772), here *inf.* (1084), here *adv.* (991, 2060), stere *n.* (2417).

matere, 309 f ( : here *inf.*), 955 f ( : heyre *adv.*), 2403 f ( : here 3 *pl. pr. I.*) ; mateere, 2225 f ( : cleere *adj. pl.*) ; matère, 343 ; matière (+ *vowel*), 1582 ; matyr, 1959 f ( : 3er be 3er) ; (+ *vowel*) 270 ; màter (+ *cons.*) 2136.  
preyere, 1141 ; 2268 f ( : chere *n.*). — panter (+ *vowel*), 1119.

§ 29. Nouns in consonant + *-re* (variants in *-er*, *-ir* and *-ere*).

chambre, 1718 ; chambere, 2623 ; chambir, 1638 ; chambre, 2674.  
lettere, 1362 f ( : bettere *adj.*) ; lettere, 1366, 1564, 1670, 2513, 2515, 2555 ; lettere, 1354, 1678, 2494.  
monstre, 1991 ; monstre, 1928.  
ordere, 2514 ; ordere, 227.  
profre, 2079, 2094.  
sclaundere, 1416, 1814 ; slaundere, 2231.

§ 30. Nouns in *-ye*, *-ie*.

When the ending rhymes with itself, the rhyme-words are left unregistered.

auouterye, 1809 f ( : crye *inf.*).  
chiualrye, 1822 f ; chyualrye, 608 f ( : lye 3 *pl. pr. S.*), 1912 f ( : deye *inf.*).  
cumpanye, 951 f ( : hye *inf.*), 1327 f ( : lye *inf.*) ; cumpanye, 1047 ; cumpaynye, 967 f ( : espie *inf.*), 1601 f ( : eye *n.*) ; compaynye, 1408 f ; compaignye, 2058 f ( : lye 1 *s. pr. S.*).  
curteysye, 318 f ( : repleye *inf.*), 1478 f ( : hye *inf.*).  
enuye, 902 f ( : lye *inf.*), 1409 ; enuyë (+ *cons.*), 757 ; enuye, 333.  
eresye, 256. — flaterye, 2540 f. — folye, 252 f ( : denye *inf.*), 723 f. — gelosye, 722 f. — genterye, 380 f ( : flye *n.*). — heresy, cf. eresye. — Ielosye, cf. gelosye. — maladye, 1379 f ( : deye *inf.*). — maystrye, 386. — menstralsye, 2615 f ( : hye *adj. pl.*). — nauye, 960 f ( : hye *inf.*), 1335 f ( : hie *inf.*). — pàrtye, 472 ; pàrtye, 325. — rèmedye, 2015, and the following *in* occupy the time of only three syllables. — sophistrye, 125 f ( : defye *pl. pr.*

*I.*) — spicerye, 675 f ( : *espie inf.*) — tyrannye, 355 f ( : *Lumbardye pr. n.*) — vilanye, 1823 f ; vilenye, 2333 f ( : *crye inf.*), 2541 f.

§ 31. Nouns in unaccented *-ye*.

This list includes (i.) *stodye* (study), and (ii.) three nouns in *-drye*.

glorye, 2531 f ( : *memorye*) ; gldrye, 924, but see the verse.

memorye, 1685 f ( : *storye*), 2530 f ( : *glorye*).

storye, 1684 f ( : *memorye*) ; (2 syll.), 309, 2239, 2257, 2484 ; stòrye (*-ye* slurred with following vowel), 2343, 2364 ; story (2 syll.), 80, 291, 618, 1153 ; story (*-y* slurred with following vowel), 87, 272, 1161, 1825.

stodye, 39 ; *-ye* is either slurred with the following word (*as*), or protected by the caesura.

§ 32. A few Romance words that end in a consonant in Old French take a final *-e* in *L. G. W.*

darte (O.F. *dart*), 2245 f ( : *Marte pr. n.*).

disioynt (O.F. *disjoint pp.*), cf. § 34, VIII.

foreyne (O.F. *forain adj.*), 1962 f ( : *tweyne num.*). This is the only example of this use of *forain* cited by Mätzner, except *Manip. Voc.*, p. 201 : *foreyne*, *forica*, where the spelling shows a final *-e*. In Robt. of Gl., p. 310, occurs the expression *chambre forene*, which indicates that the final *-e* is correct and is due to the fact that when *chambre* was dropped from the original phrase, the adjective remained feminine.

store (O.F. *estor*), 2337 f ( : *ever more adv.*).

tràuayle (O.F. *travail*), 1509.

§ 33. Words ending in Old French in *-é* and *-ée* end indiscriminately in *-e* in *L. G. W.* (See ten Brink, § 223, V.)

Tall figures indicate that a vowel follows without causing elision.

autorite, 2394 f. — benygnete, 361 f. — beutè, 1010 f, 2289 f, 2584 f ; 1912 ; beùte, 112, 177, 984, 1013, 1040, 1746, 1749 ; in 2291 Fx. and B. have *bounte* (Fx. *bounde*), the other MSS. read *beute*. — boùnte, 510, 1478. — chàtitè, 1737 f. — cytè, 1589 f ; sìte, 1916 ; cète, 781, 937, 1035, 1051 ; cetè, 1049 f, 2404 f, 2682 f.



— cuntrè, 5 f, 1279 f, 1418 f, 2022 f, 2053 f, 2116 f, 2248 f ;  
cùntre, 721, 938, 966, 990 (+ here *adv.*), 1329, etc. Very difficult is 2155 :

And to the cuntre of Ennepye hym dyghte ;

perhaps the best way is to make the second foot consist of *the cuntrè* (or slur *cùntre* or *Ennepye?*) — degre, 370 f, 385 f, 437 f, 451 f, 488 f, 1031 f, 1065 f, 1411 f. — dede, ‡ \* 322, is a mistake for *deite*, cf. the other MSS., 1506 f, 2070 f, 2081 f ; 231. — destenè, 952 f, 2580 f ; 1299. — deynthe, 100, 920. — duetèe, 360 f. — equite, 384 f. — felicite, 1588 f ; felycite, 2588. — gre, 1313 f. — honeste, 2701 f ; oneste 1673 f, 1736 f. — meynè, 1059 f, 1189 f, 1222 f ; meyne, 1089, 1498 ; myne, 2201. — natyuyte, 2576 f. — pèrre, 1201. — pitè, 1920 f, 2222 f ; 1255 ; pite, 1078, 1249, 2461, 2684 ; petè, 1976 f, 2184 f ; pète, 286, 491, 1079, 1080, 1324. — possibilite, 191 f. — prosperite, 590 f, 906 f, 1030 f. — renone, 1513 f. — subtilè, 2546 f.

§ 34. Romance nouns which have no final *-e* in French have none in *L. G. W.*

For convenience the examples are classed as, — (I.) words in *-er* ; (II.) words in *-our* ; (III.) words in *-ent*, *-ment* ; (IV.) words in *-aunt* ; (V.) words in *-ion*, *-ioun* ; (VI.) words in *-s* ; (VII.) words in a vowel ; (VIII.) miscellaneous words.

(I.) Words in *-er*.

calendier (3 *syll.*), 533. — carpentir, 2418. — courser, 1114, 1204. — erber (O.F. herbier), 97. — gayler, 2051 f ( : hir = here *adv.*) ; gayler, 1988, 2010, 2021, 2026, etc. ; gayler (+ *vowel*), 2153. — leyser, 1552. — losenger (O.F. losengier), 328 f ( : acusour, *which probably ought to be written* acuser). — messangeer, 1479 ; mas-sanger, 1484. — porter, 1717. — pòwer, 690. — straunger, 1075.

(II.) Words in *-our*.

acusour, 329, cf. *losenger*, above. — autour, 1139, 1228, 1352 ; auztour, 460. — conquerour, 1649 f. — fermour, 358. — flour, 55 f, 70 f, 77 f, 519 f, 1009 f ; 72, 73, 196, 2248. — gouvernour, 1060 f. — honour, 56 f, 69 f, 518 f, 585 f, 1008 f, 1061 f, 1446 f, 1508 f, 1622 f, 1648 f, 2441 f ; 394, 924, 1408, etc. — labour, 78 f, 306 f, 1447 f, 1509 f, 1623 f ; 988. — myroure, 307 f. —

morderour, 2390, is probably only a French spelling of the Anglo-Saxon *nomen agentis* in *-ere*. — rasour, 2654. — senatour, 584 f, 596 f. — socour (O.F. *socors*), 2440 f ( : honour ) ; 1053, 1476, 1489, 2432 ; socours, 1341 f ( : cours ). — tenor, 929. — tour, 1960 ; toure, 936. — traytour, 1328, 1656, 2068, 2174, 2324, 2702. — tresor, 1652, 2151, 2628 ; tresore, 1444. — werriour, 597 f.

(III.) Words in *-ent*, *-ment*.

assent, 1547 f. — compassement, 1416 f. — enchauntément, 1650 f. — innocent, 1546 f. — iugement, 392 f. — parlément, 407 f. — prèsent, 1148, 1935. — tàlent, 1771.

(IV.) Words in *-aunt*.

couenaunt, 688, 790, 2139 ; comenaunt, 693. — remenaunt, 230, 623 ; remenau[n]t, 2383. — semblaunt, 2691 ; semblau[n]t, 1735. — seruaunt, 2081, 2120 ; seruau[n]t, 1957 ; seruant, 1313.

(V.) Words in *-ion*, *-ioun*.

affeccioun, 44 f, 511 f, 793 f, 1229 f, 1421 f, 1522 f. — compassioun, 376 f, 1690 f, 1974 f, 2421 f. — conclusioun, 2646 f, 2723 f. — condycioun, 40 f. — confusioun, 1369 f, 2652 f. — destruccioun, 626 f ; distruccioun, 930 f. — deuocioun, 251 f, 1017 f. — discrecioun (3 *syll.*), 611. — excepcioun, 2653 f. — fundacioun, 739 f. — ymagynacioun, 1523 f. — mencioun, 1228 f, 2599 f. — occasioun, 994 f. — oppressioun, 2592 f. — passioun, 213 f. — protestacioun, 2640. — regioun, 995 f, 1412 f ; 1445 (3 *syll.*) ; regyoun, 2445 f. — suspescioun, 1290. — translacioun, 250 f.

(VI.) Words in *-s*.

cas, 452 f, 583 f, 803 f, 837 f, 877 f, 982 f, 1046 f, 1056 f, 1083 f, 1558 f, 1967 f, 2170 f ; 1630, 2083, 2217 ; cace, 395 ( : trespass *n.* ). — cors, 676, 677, 876. — cours, 1340 f ( : socours ). — cumpas, 199 f ; 227. — deuys, 1102 f. — encres, 1087 f. — ensens, 2612. — las, 600 f. — los, 1424 f, 1514 f. — paleys, 1096, 2406, 2618, 2644. — paradys, 1103 f. — pas, 187 f, 200 f, 802 f, 2712 f. — pes, 1585. — prys, 2534. — proces, 1553, 1914. — purpos, 954, 1825. — socours, cf. *socour*, above. — solas, 1966 f. — tras, 188 f. — trespass, 453 f ; trespass, 470 ; 394 f ( : cace *n.* ). — vers, 1678.

## (VII.) Words ending in a vowel (not -e).

arày, 1505, 2290, 2607. — asày, 1594 f; 84. — fey, 778 f, 1365 f; 1087, 2519; feyth, 2700. — lay, 314 f; 420. — May, 36 f, 45 f, 89 f, 613 f. — mèrcy, 390, 835, 988, 1316, 1324. — nèveu, 1440; nèwew, 1442, 2659. — palfrey, 1116, 1198. — rùby(e), 1119. — vèrtu, 56, 297.

## (VIII.) Miscellaneous.

abit, 1830; abyte, 146, 187. — ayr (O.F. heir, air), 1598 f, 1819 f, 2549 f. — appetit, 1586 f. — arest, 806 f, 1929 f; areste, 383 f (: beste *n.*). — art, 1607, 2546. — braun, \* 1071; several of the other MSS. have *braunes*. — capoun, 1389, 1392. — chif, 2109. — comparisoun, 207 f; 110. — còndit, 852. — cònfort, 181. — cònquest, 1298, 1676. — conseit, 1764. — cònseyl, 2431. — cost, 1448. — [costrel], 2666; G. Tr. S. have *costret*, A28. *costrete*, A12. *costreth*, the rest *costrel*. — court, 328, 334, 1194, 1949, 2037, 2440. — delyt, 1199 f, 1587, 1939 f; 1380; delit, 1770 f. — disèrt, 608. — desyr, 734 f, 1157 f, 1750 f; 2262. — despit, 352; dispit, 1771 f, 1938 f; 122, 1822. — disioynt, 1631 f. — dispayr, 1754 f; dispeyr, 660, 2557. — dongeoun (2 *syll.*), 937 f. — dragoun, 1430 f, 1581 f; 1437. — duk, 1654; deuk, 2442; duc, 1580. — effect, 620, 1160, 1180, 1924, 2403; effeect, 622. — eyr (O.F. air), 1482 f. — estat, 113 f, 400 f; 1036, 1105; astat, 1981; herè stat = here estat, 375. — faucoun, 1120. — feyth, 2700, cf. *fey*, above. — fyn, 2233. — forest, 842 f; 2310. — freut, 1160, 2395. — gyn, 1784 f. — grapènel, 640. — guerdoun, 1662 f; gwerdone, 2052. — habit, cf. *abit*, above. — heir, cf. *ayr*. — Jewel, 1117. — lioun, 1214; lyoun, 377 f, 627 f, 829 f; 842; leoun, 1605 f. — myschef, 1655 f, 2331 f, 2637 f; myschief, 1261 f; myschif, 1278. — origynal, 1558. — ost (= army), 625, 632. — part, 190, 912, 1392, 2213. — peril, 839, 1630; peryl, 1083; paril, 1277. — poynt, 2138, 2543, 2548; 1630 f (: disioint *n.*). — poysoun, 2180. — port, 2453. — prisoun, 2598 f; 2336; prysoun, 1975, 2722; 1950, 1997, 2011. — renàrd, 2448. — reneгат, 401 f. — renoun, 510 f, 711 f, 1604 f; rènoun, 1054; ronoun, 214 f; cf. also *renone* (§ 33). — rèport, 726. — [resoun.] rosoun, 728. — rèward (= regard), 385, 1622. — romauns, 255. — sarm-

oun, 2025. — sesoun, 39 f; seson, 118. — soun, 221 f; 637, 745, 752, 2615. — spirit (*1 syl.*), 2066; sprit (*2 syll.*), 2069; spryt (*2 syll.*), 262. — strif, 80; stryf, 595 f. — tresoun, 1783. — veyn (Lat. vanum), 1359 f. — venym, 2241, 2593. — veroun, 227 f (*in veroun for enviroun*). — vessel, 2308.

§ 35. The genitive singular of nouns, whether of Germanic or Romance origin, ends in *L. G. W.* for the most part in *-is* (variants, *-ys*, *-es*), irrespective of original gender and declension. Examples are : —

I. beddis, 1334; beddys, 1719. — dayis, 54; dayes, 507. — faderis, 1406; faderys, 2449; faderes, 2608. — foxis, 2448. — goddis, † 10; godys, 2264. — heuēnys, 1221. — kyngis, 1745, 1789, 1819, 1953, 1969, 1975, 2055, 2080. — lordis, 2023; lordys, 1979. — louys, 183, 914. — lyuys, 1624. — nyghtis, 1203. — quienis, 1490. — shamys, 2064, 2072. — systeris, 2635. — somerys, 90, 100, 130. — speris, 645. — theuys, 455. — wightis, 1014. — wyuys, 2151, 2274.

II. bestis, 2005.

§ 36. One word makes a genitive without change of form :

hertē blod, 2105; hertē rote, 1993. But, — myn hertis remembrance, 686; myn hertis lyf, 2278; myn hertes lyf, 2298; myn owene herte is reste, 507.

sorwē smerte, 579, is error for *sorwes smerte*, where *smerte* is prob. *adj. pl.*

§ 37. Genitives of proper names.

I. Names in *-s* have the genitive identical in form with the nominative.

Anchises, 1086 : Venus sone and Anchises. — Bacus temple, 2376. — Lygurges doughter, 2425. — Mars venym, 2593. — Nysus doughtyr, 1908. — Phebus systyr, 986. — Thoas doughtyr, 1468. — Venus sone, 1086.

II. Other genitives.

Colatynys hous, 1713. — Pandionys fayre doughtyr, 2247.

§ 38. The plural of nouns, of whatever origin, ends regularly in *-is* (*-ys*, *-es*). (Cf. Child, § 22 ; ten Brink, §§ 202, 206, 210, 213, 225.)

- I. armys (*brachia*), 1302, 2158, 2287, 2343, 2707. — armys (*arma*), 605, 1274, 1388. — aspectys, 2597. — auentürys, 1515 ; auentourys, 953. — ballis, 2003. — balkis, 2253. — barris, 1200. — beddis, 1107. — bekys, 134. — bestis, 2165, 2198 ; bestys, 1217, 2192. — bokis, 25, 342, 918 ; bokys, 17, 27, 30, 34, 82, 273, 609. In 271 : *ne* in alle thyne bokys *ne* coudist thow nat fynde, the first *ne* should be slurred with *in*, and the second *ne* (which makes the sentence declaratory instead of interrogative) should be omitted. — bolys, 1432 ; *bolē*, 1437, should be *boles*. — bonys, 1071 f. — boundys, 536, 1673. — braunchis, 127. — brochis, 1131, 1275. — caris, 1955 ; carys, 762. — clerkis, 278, \* 350. — clyuys, 1470. — clothis, 973, 1131. — compleyntys, 363. — cryaturys, \* † 138 f, 1370 f. — crokis, 640. — crounnys, 2614. — dartis, 167. — dauncis, 1269 f. — dedis, 1152. — deuysis, 1272. — doingis, 1681 f. — dremys, 2658. — duchessis, 2127. — effectis, 929. — erbis, 775. — eres (*ures*), 330. — estris, 1715. — feldis, 782 ; feldys, 787. — festis, 1269. — flourys, 42, 149, 152, 517 ; 161 *in* lylve flourys ; 112 f ( : odours) ; flouris, 38, 41, 55, 101, 108 ; in \* 48, instead of *flouris*, the other MSS. have *flour*, which is better. — folis, 262 ; folys, 315. — formys, 2228. — foulis, 118, 407 ; foulys, 37. — frendis, 732, 798, 1827 ; frendys, 1831, 2621 ; fryndys, 1833. — garlondis, 2614. — gestis (*hospites*), 1126. — gleedys, 167. — goddis, 1920, 2522 ; goddys, 373, 2222 ; in 1360, it is perhaps best to read with Skeat : Syn that the goddis been contraire to me ; but Vpon the goddys that he for lef ne [G. or] loth, 1639, and As likede to the goddis er she was born, 2578, show that *goddis* was sometimes monosyllabic. — grekis, 275. — greuys (*nemora*), 159 f. — hachis, 648. — handis, 2692 ; hondis, 2688, 2689. — hertis (*cervi*), 1212. — houndis, 1194. — hedys, 705. — helys, 863. — herys (*crines*), 1829. — hokys, 641, 646. — howses, 2593. — knyghtis, 1196. — kyngis, 1012, 1680 f. — laumpis, 2610. — landys, 1283. — leuys, 151, 160. — lygis (*lieges*), 366. — lyuys, 283, 475. — lordis, 1012, 70, 1317, 1412 ; lordys, 370, 711. — luris, 1371 f. — matèris,

279. — natures, \*† 137 f. — nettis, 1190. — obeysauncis, 1268 f ( : dauncis ) ; obeysaunce, † 135 f ( : obseruauncys ). — obseruauncys, 136 f. — odours, 111 f ( : flourys ). — oris (*oars*), 2308. — pottis, 649. — presentis, ‡ 1135 ; the other MSS. (except P.) read *presentyng*. — quenys, 2129. — regnys, 22, 585. — reher-syngys, 24. — rokkis, 2193, is better than *rokkis* ; all the other MSS. have *answerde* instead of *answerden*. — ropis, 641. — ryngis, 1131, 1275. — sacryfises, 2611. — sakkis, 1118. — saylis, 2518. — shippis, 1094 ; schippis, 1093 ; schepes, 960, 968, 1089, 1453 ; shepis, 1288, 1512, 2270, 2480. — signys, \* 2367, 2369. sythis (*times*), 1. — songis, 67, 1273, 2616. — sonys, 2566. — soules, 2493. — speris, 1190. — spicis, 1110. — steppis, 829, 2209. — stonys, 639, 673, 1117, 2224. — stremys, \* 774. — strokys, 655. — teris, 2284, 2527 ; terys, 873, 1301, 2348, 2529. — thyngis, 18, 23, 1130, 1133, 1274, 2027. — tilis, 709. — tymys, 2504. — tounnys, 714. — tressis, 203. — turwis (*turfs*), 98. — wallis, 708. — werdys (*weirds*), 2580. — wilis, 2294. — wyngis, 143 ; wengis, 168. — wiuys, 1744 ; wyuys, 282, 306 ; wyues, 474. — wordis, 746, 1069, 1373, 2124, 2462 ; wordys, 183, 765. — ziftys, 1551, 2304.

II. dayis, 1668 ; halydayis, 410 f. — dayesyis (dissyllable), 43. — vyrelayes, 411 f. — weyis, 7, 2013.

III. clawis, 2320. — thewis, 2577. — wawis, 865.

IV. arwis, 972, 982, 991. — halwis, 1310. — wedewys, 283.

V. chambris, 1111 ; daunsynge chamberys, 1106. — faderys, 730, 900, 1295. — letteres, 1275 ; letterys, 2358. — loueris, 834, 1167, 1368, 1385, 2565 ; louerys, 743, 2180. — nadderys, 699. — en-samples, 1258. — epistelis (2 *syll.*), 1465. — tokenys (2 *syll.*), 1275.

VI. lādȳis, 186 ; *but* lādȳis, 1372.

VII. Plurals with synizesis : fur̃is, 2252. — ðp̃iȳs, 2670. — rubyȳis, 673 ; rubeȳis, 522. — storyȳis, 21 f, 274, 312, 528 ; four of the MSS. have *storyȳis* in 2484. — victoryȳis, 22 f.

§ 39. Exceptions to § 38. The following words ending in a consonant or an accented *-e* sometimes or always make their plural in *-s* or *-ȳs*. (Cf. Child, § 22 ; ten Brink, § 226).

I. Words in *-nt* (*-aunt, -ent, -oynt*).

instrumentis, 1101. — ornamentis, 1107 f ( : paramentys). — paramentys, 1106 f ( : ornamentis). — poyntis, 1529 ; poyntys (*dissyll.*), 320. — serpen .s, 697 ; serpentys (*dissyll.*), 679. — seruantis, 247, 249, 1723 ; seruantys, \* 484. — tyrauntis, 354.

II. Words in *-ioun*.

excusacyouns, 362 f. — petyciouns, 363 f.

III. Dissyllables in *-en, -ayn*, with the accent on the penult.

maydenys, 282, 990, 2673 ; but

Of goode wemen maydenys and wyues, 474.

In 722 it seems to me more objectionable to make *maydenys* trisyllabic than to regard the verse as lacking the first syllable :

Maydenys been I-kept for gelosye.

payenys, 1688 ; in 786 one may read *payenys* . . . *Idolēs*, or *payenys* . . . *Idoles*.

Rðmeynys (*dissyll.*), 627, 630, 1695 ; Rðmaynys (*dissyll.*), 275.

wardenys (*dissyll.*), 753 ; (*trisyll.*), 780.

IV. Words in *-r*.

auncestris, 2536. — àtourys (*dissyll.*), 88, 308. — conseylerys, 1550 f ( : offiserys). — courseris (*dissyll.*), 1195. — maryneris (*trisyll.*), 2169. — massangerys (*trisyll.*), \* 1091. — neighëboris (*trisyll.*), 720. — offiserys, 1551 f ( : conseylerys).

## V. Miscellaneous words with consonantal ending.

baladis, \* 411. — Idolys, 786, cf. *payenys*, III, above. — merveyliis, 1431. — nàrcotÿkis, 2670. — regalys (*dissyll.*), 2128. — roundelys (*dissyll.*), \* 411. — tydyngis, 1724.

VI. Words in accented *-e*.

autðriteis (4 *syll.*), 83. — beùteis (*dissyll.*), 208. — deÿnteis (*dissyll.*), 1100.

§ 40. Plurals of the *n*-declension which preserve the Anglo-Saxon ending (*-an*) in the form *-en (-yn)* are :

eyen, 102, 827, 859, 885, 1038, 1734, 2240, 2647. In 237, instead of *eyē caste*, several of the other MSS. have *eyēn caste*.

pesyn (A.S. piosan), 648.

§ 41. Plurals in *-en* (*-yn*) by imitation (Child, § 24 ; ten Brink, § 215, 217).

bretheryn, 2562, 2601.

childeryn, 901, 1562, 1568, 1574, 1926 ; in 1657 G. has *childere* (cf. A.S. *cildru*), but all the other MSS. have *childeryn*.

doughteryn, 1963.

systeryn, 2630 ; susteryn, 979.

§ 42. Plurals with umlaut (Child, § 26 ; ten Brink, § 214).

fet, 2209.

men, 1, 10, 11, 12, 666, etc., gentil men, 1506 ; werkemen, 672.

teth, 2006.

wemen, 188, 190, 193, 266, 1830 ; wemyn, 2353.

§ 43. In the following words plurals occur identical in form with the singular.

fortenyght, 2256.

thyng, 11 (?), 1347.

tyme is the reading of five of the MSS. in 1342 (twenty tyme).

3er, 2259.

sayl, 654, sg. ? ; cf. the passage from Florus quoted by Skeat, *ad loc.*, which contains the expression *veloque purpureo*.

brond, The furies thre with al here mortal brond, 2252 (cf. Eumenides *tenuere faces de funere raptas*. — Ovid, *Met.* vi, 426 (Skeat), is perhaps singular.

§ 44. The genitive plural does not differ in form from the genitive singular.

queenys, alle queenys flour, 1009.

Grekis sleyghte, 931.

§ 45. Dative plural (Anglo-Saxon *-um*).

whilom (A.S. *hwflum*), 422, 1005, 2562 ; whylom, 706 ; whihom, 901.

fote (A.S. *fótum*), cf. lyght of fote, § 14. Perhaps to be taken as a singular.



## ADJECTIVES.

§ 46. Adjectives ending in Anglo-Saxon in a short vowel (in the indefinite use) end in *-e* in *L. G. W.* (Cf. Child, § 29; ten Brink, § 230).

Most of these are either *jo*-stems or *i*-stems that have gone over entirely to the *jo*-declension: *dere*, *fremde*, *grene*, *kene*, *mete*, *newe*, *riche*, *sene*, *stille*, *thikke*, *trewe*, *wilde*. Here belong *softe*, and *sote*. *Narwe* (*wo*-stem) may owe its form partly to the influence of the oblique cases. For *alone*, cf. § 47.

*dere*, *deere* (A.S. *déore*, W.S. *díere*, *dýre*, L. *deore*, *dure*, O. *deore*, *dere*), that was hire so *dere*, 701 f (: *cheere n.*); that art to me so *dere*, 2296 f (: here *adv.*); a doughtyr *dere*, 2574; It nas not *sene dere* I-now a myte, 741. For the definite use of *dere* cf. *myn dere herte*, 1294, 2122; *fadyr dere*, 2329; *pandionys fayre doughtyr dere*, 2247 f; *hire herte deere*, 868 f.

*fewe* (A.S. *féa*, *féawe*, plur. tant., L<sup>b</sup> *feue*, *feuzē*, O. *fæwe*), of a *fewe*, 284 f (: on a *rewe*).

*fremde* (A.S. *fremde*, O. *fremnde*), 1046.

*grene* (A.S. *grēne*, *gréne*, L. *grene*, O. *grene*, *pl.*), ffor whichē the white coroun above the *grene*, 155 f (: for to *sene*); the *grenē medewe*, 91; the *softe* and *sote grene gras*, 225. These are the only examples of *grene* as adj. in *L. G. W.*, and unfortunately all are examples of the definite use. As noun, — *grene*, 146, 229 f (: *queene*); *-e*, 117.

*kene* (A.S. *céne*, *cýne*, L., O., *kene*), 2655 f (: *sene adj.*).

*kynde* (A.S. *cynde*, but usually *gecynde*), 303 f, 921 f, 2087 f, (all : *fynde inf.*); *unkynde*, 2716 f (: *mynde n.*); *onkynde*, 1261, 857 f (: *I-fynde inf.*).

*mete* (A.S. *mæte*), 1043 f (: *swete adj.*).

*newe* (A.S. *néowe*, *níowe*, W.S. *níewe*, *níwe*, L<sup>ab</sup>. *neowe*, *neouwe*, *niwe*, L<sup>b</sup>. *neuwe*, *newe*, O. *neowe*, *newe*), 58 f, 435 f, 1235 f, 1760 f; 1077, 2160; *newe*, 117, 1045; a *newe* (*substantively*), 289 f (: *trewe adj.*). Examples of the definite use of *newe* are : the *newe* (blysfyl) *somerys sake*, 100, 130; *hire newe geste*, 1158; this *newe troyan*, 1172; this *newe iolye wo*, 1192.

Rhyme words. — hewe *n.* (58, 1760), trewe *adj.* (435, 1235).  
ryche (A.S. *rice*, L. *riche*, *ricche*, O. *riche*), 1528 f, 2291 f; 1112;  
riche, 2302.

sene (? A.S. *gesýne*, *gesíene*, *geséne*, O., P.Pl. *sene*), 316 f, 694 f,  
2655 f; 741; I-sene, 1394 f.

Rhyme words. — queene *n.* (316, 694, 1394), kene *adj.* (2655).  
narwe (A.S. *nearu*, L. *dat.* and *pl.* *narewe*, O. *pl.* *narrwe*), 600;  
narw (+ and), 740. Definite use: this litil narwe clyfte, 744.

softe (A.S. *sófte*, *adv.*, but also used as *adj.* instead of *séfte*, *séfte*  
(cf. Sievers, § 299, n. 1, and Sweet, 2081), L. *softe*, O. *soffte*),  
745. Definite use: Vpon the softē and sote grene gras, 225.

sote (A.S. *swéte*, *swôete*, *adj.*, modified by *swôte*, *adv.*), 1077 f  
(: bote *n.*), 2612 f (: rote *n.*). Definite use: 225; the sote  
soun, 752; o swete cloth, 1338. myn herte swete, 132 f, 2190 f,  
this lady swete, 1042.

stille (A.S. *stille*, L. *stille*, O. *stille*, *still*), 236.

thikke (A.S. *picce*, cf. Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.*, II, § 48, Sweet, 586, L.  
*picke*), 1198.

trewe (A.S. *tréowe*, W.S. *tríewe*, *trýwe*, L. *treowe*, O. *trouwwe*), 434 f,  
800 f, 1234 f; 454, 456, 495, 1636, 2511; trewe, 703, 921, 1266,  
1267, 1521, 1526, 2391; trowe, 303; ontrewē, 1573; trewe,  
1576, is the only instance in *L. G. W.* of an exception to the  
rule stated at the beginning of this paragraph. Definite use:  
hire trewe louere, 1958; his trewe loue, 2227, 2542.

wilde (A.S. *wilde* (also *wild*), cf. Sweet, 450, Plummer, *s.v.*, and  
*Gnom. Vers.* 18, L., O. *wilde*), 805, 980, 1121; wilde, 844.  
Definite use: the wilde se, 2163.

Note 1. — For the *adj.* *fre* (A.S. *fréo*), invariable in form, cf. for  
examples of all sorts, 1977 f, 2152 f, 2521 f.

Note 2. — The only example of *ȝelwe* is definite: thyn ȝelwe her,  
1672.

Note 3. — The only examples of *shene* are definite, as, — ysiphele  
the shene, 1467 f, — except, the morwe schene, 49 f.

§ 47. In *alone*, -e goes back to the Anglo-Saxon weak ("definite")  
ending -a.

alone (A.S. *eall ána*, L. *al ane*, O. *all ane*), 1798 f, 2378 f; alone,  
1777.

Rhyme word. — mone *n.*

§ 48. *Lyte, meche* belong in a category by themselves. On their relations to A.S. *lyt, lytel, micel, mycel*, see especially Bright, *Am. Jour. of Philology*, IX, 219.

*lyte, lite* (A.S. *lyt, adv., lytel, adj.*) is said by ten Brink, § 231, to be "im Sing. wohl nur substantivisch gebraucht," but this is contradicted by four places in *L. G. W.*: *thow that myn wit be lite*, 29 f (: *delite 1 s. pr. I.*), *thyn penaunce is but lyte*, 484 f (: *quite inf.*), *this clyfte was so narw and lyte*, 740 f (: *myte n.*), *It oughte be to zow but lyte glorye*, 2531. In 2531, all the other MSS. have *lytel*, which is perhaps the correct reading; but the three other cases are secured by the rhyme, and by the agreement of all the MSS. except in 29 where the rest have the substantive use: *though that I konne but lyte*. For the substantive use of *lyte*, see 523 f, 2495 f.

For *litol* see 744, 1205, 1225, 2376; *lityl*, 537; *lytil*, 489, 2391; *lytyl*, 97; *substantively*, *lytil wroughten*, 1696; *adverbially*, *lytil lasse*, 2256.

*meche* (A.S. *micel*, L.W.S. *mycel*), *meche sorwe*, 946; *meche doute*, \*1613; so *meche wo*, 2685; so *mech[ē]* good, 1175; *fful meche ontrouthe*, 1677. Cf. also *meche adv.*, as *meche as*, 430; and in *as meche as*, 764.

§ 49. Several adjectives which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant, sometimes or always take *-e* in *L. G. W.* (Cf. Child, § 30; ten Brink, § 231).

Some of the *-e*'s in the following list are perhaps to be explained on grammatical grounds. Of petrified vocatives (cf. ten Brink, § 235, Anm., but also Zupitza, *Deutsche Lit.-Zeit.*, 1885, coll. 610, 613, and Freudenberger, pp. 37-40) there is only one example: *false Demophon*. In *longe tyme, longe while, olde tyme*, one is tempted to see the remains of old dative constructions in which the final vowel has been preserved by the cadence of the phrase.

[bare] (A.S. *bær*, L<sup>a</sup>. *bare*, L<sup>b</sup>. *bar*, P.Pl<sup>bc</sup>. *bare*, P.Pl<sup>c</sup>. *bar*) *only* in *barefot* (A.S. *bærfót*, L<sup>a</sup>. *bar-fot*, L<sup>b</sup>. *bareuot*), 2189: And to the stronde barefot faste she wente.

*brode* (A.S. *brád*, L. *bræd*, *brad*, *brod*, O. *brad*, P.Pl. *brod*), *adj. in pred.?* or *adv.?* 851: The blode out of the wounde as brode sterte As watyr whan the condit brokyn is.

[fayre] (A.S. fæger, L<sup>a</sup>. fæir, -e, fæizer, faire, etc., L<sup>b</sup>. fair, O. fazzer, P.Pl. fayre), *only in fayre*, 2460. fayr, 1483 f, 1599 f, 1755 f, 1818 f, 2548 f; 57, 613, 1037, 1073, 1763, 2288.

Rhyme words. — eyr *n.* (1483), ayr *n.* (1599, 1818, 2548), dispayr *n.* (1755).

false (late A.S. fals, from O.F. or Latin, P.Pl. fals), To tellen þow of false demophon, 2398; so in all the MSS. except Tr., which has *of hym that fals demofon*. Here and in 2495 Gilman (Riverside edition of Chaucer) reads *Demophoön* (cf. Freudenberger, p. 38), but everywhere else in *L. G. W.* it is *Dēmophòn*, which may be retained both here and in 2495 if we read *falsë* and *Ostessë*.

fals, 457, 857, 1236, 1390, 1585, 1669, 2235, 2447, 2492, 2556, 2571.

[frosche] (A.S. fersc, L. freche, frech, O. fressh), *no examples*. — frosch, 57, 1761.

goode (A.S. góð, L., O. god), 506, *this immediately preceding probably caused the scribe to write final -e*. good, 494 f (: hod *n.*); \* 270, 696, 700, 802, 1087, 1149, 1460 : *substantively*, it dede hem good, 122 f (: brod *n.*).

[grete] (A.S. gréat, O. græt), *no examples*.

gret, 44, \* 417, 525, 598, 711, 793, 794, 1008, 1345, 1409, 1421, 1446, 1506, 1508, 1514, 1532, 1604, 1976, 2161, 2444, 2445, 2584, 2712.

liche (A.S. gelíc, *adj.* also gelíca, *n.*, L. iliche, ilike, O. like), there was no man hym liche, 1529 f (: ryche *adj.*); there nas non hire lyche, 2291 f (: ryche *adj.*). The final -e may possibly be due to the influence of the noun; indeed *lyche* in 2291 might be taken as the noun if there were no other examples to consider.

lik, 1206; lyk, 354, 1066, 1068, 1604, 2446, 2649.

longe (A.S. lang, long, L. long, O. lang), And longe tyme they wroughte in this manere, 772. And preyede to [other MSS. omit *to*] god er it were long [all the other MSS. except Tr. *longe*] while, 1571; longe, 1921; longe, 1565, 1679.

long, 2675 f (: song *n.*); 1184, 1458, 2219, 2515.

loude (A.S. hlúd), with ful loude a steuene, 2328.

olde (A.S. eald, ald, L<sup>a</sup>. æld, ald, -e, olde, L<sup>b</sup>. hold, -e, O. ald), of olde tyme, 739. — old, 80, etc.

[wode] (A.S. wód), *no examples.*

wod, 736 f (: stod 3 *s. pt. I.*); 624, 935; fforwod (cf. *Studies and Notes*, I, 16), 2420.

wrecche (A.S. wræcc, L. wræc(c)he, wrec(c)he, wracche, O. wrecche),  
I wrecche man, 2214; perhaps also in the definite use in *the*  
*wrèchede engèndrynge*, 414; cf. *3e wrechede gelos faderys our*, 900.

Note 1.—For *-e* written but not pronounced cf. (besides the instances just given) *cole* (A.S. col), 258 f (: fole *n.* = fool).

Note 2.—For examples of monosyllabic adjectives ending in a consonant in A.S. which take no *-e* in *L. G. W.* cf. the following: *blynd* (169), *bold* (879 f), *bright* (1202), *cold* (878 f, 2197, 2683), *ded* (883 f, 1816 f, 2345 f, 2644 f, 182, 894, 1676, 1810, 1834, 2642, 2649, 2701), *derk* (1999, 2415), *gayn* (1137 f), *fer* (1418), *foul* (388, 1380, 1609, 1818), *ful* (640, 1100, 1513, 2255, 2408, 2615), *glad* (64, 815, 961, 1223, 2626), *hol* (2468), *hot* (914 f), *kyn* (2244), *lef* (2636 f; 1260 f, 1654 f, 1639 f), *lyght* (1699, 2711), *loth* (1639 f), *red* (521, 1199), *ryght* (2327 f, 371), *sad* (1521), *schort* (393, 1309), *sek*, *syk* (2409, 2436), *shamefast* (1535 f), *sharp* (1795), *sound* (1619, 2468), *strong* (891), *war* (593 f, 463, 629, \* 1739), *warm* (914), *whit* (1198 f, 148, 174, 520), *wis*, *wys* (1528, 1599, 1521), *wo* (1985 f, 2339), *wroth* (667 f), *song* (400, 1038, 1451, 2075, 2288).

§ 50. The following adjectives of Germanic origin also show an *-e* in *L. G. W.*

badde (? A.S. bæddel), 277 f (: ladde 3 *pl. pt. I.*).

lowe (O.N. lágr, L<sup>a</sup>. laih, ley, loh, *pl.* laje, loje, L<sup>b</sup>. loh, laje, *pl.* lowe, O. lah), 938, but in all the other MSS. except Tr. the word following is *y-brought*; 1961 f (: throwe *pp.*); lowe, 2714.

low (+ *cons.*), 2060, 2081.

meke (O.N. mjúkr, O. meoc, P.Pl<sup>c</sup>. meke), 175 f (: seke *inf.*).

Note 1.—For *clad*, cf. 229. Skeat and ten Brink (§ 12) regard *clad* as a contracted form of the *pp.* cláðod, but the vowel is not right (the two other examples cited by ten Brink are for various reasons not in point). Sweet derives it from O.N. klæðdi, pt. Why not derive it from klæddr, which has just the right form and meaning? For *wayk*, *weik*, (O.N. veikr), cf. 2428, 2713.

Note 2.—The only occurrence of *wikke* is *The wikke fame*, 1242.

§ 51. Final unaccented *-e* in adjectives of Romance origin is preserved in *L. G. W.* (cf. Child, § 19; ten Brink, § 239).

I. *bènygne* (O.F. *benigne*), 175. — *chast* (O.F. *chaste*), 1577 (+ *vowel*). — *còntrarye* (O.F. *contraire*), 1360, but Skeat, following S., has the better reading *contraire*. — *thebonoyre* (O.F. *debonere*, *-aire*), 179 f (: *fayre*) is merely an instance of bad spelling. — *dygne* (O.F. *digne*), 1742 f (: *sygne n.*). — *huge* (O.F. *ahuge*, *ahoge*), 1197. — *large* (O.F. *large*), 2360 f, 2406 f, 2515 f; 1116, 1118; *large*, 893; *definite use*, *large*, 1019, 1329. — *nyce* (O.F. *nice*), 340 f (: *malyce*). — *pale* (O.F. *pale*), 831, 866, 2317. — *pore* (O.F. *povre*), 113; *definite use*, *pouere* (1 *syl.*), 1981. — *propre* (O.F. *propre*), 259. — *queynte* (O.F. *cointe*), \* 329. — *sobre* (O.F. *sobre*), 2672. — *straunge* (O.F. *estrange*), 1474. — *tendere* (O.F. *tendre*), 1389.

## II. Words in *-ble*:

*able*, 246 f. — *charytable*, 434. — *feble* (*slurred*), 2590. — *honorable*, 247 f; 1126, 2452. — *humble*, 135, 1375. — *inuysible*, 1021 f. — *merciabie*, 396 f; *mercyable*, 323. — *noble*, 173, 383, 607, 710, 936, 1004, 1164, 1210. — *drible*, 1681. — *stable*, 322 f, 703 f. — *tretable*, 397 f.

Note. — French *-é* is of course preserved; cf. *attempre*, 1483, *auyse*, 1521 f, *discheuele*, 1315, 1720, 1829, *priue*, 1780, *secre*, 1528; for the definite *tempre* (other MSS. *attempre*), cf. 1116.

§ 52. Some Romance adjectives take an *-e* in Middle English that have none in Old French. Of these only one occurs in *L. G. W.*

*dewe* (O.F. *deu*), 603 f (: *value n.*); *duewe*, 364.

*fyn* (O.F. *fin*), seems not to have final *-e* in *L. G. W.*; cf. of o *perle fyn* and, 153; of *fyn louynge*, 534.

*queynte* (O.F. *cointe*), cf. § 51.

Note. — For examples of the singular number of Romance adjectives in the indefinite use, see the following: — *crewel* (357 f, 1929), *naturel* (356 f), *dryental* (152 f), *real*, *ryal* (1605, 146, 187); *famous* (1404), *glorious* (473), *Ieloùs* (331); *desolat* (1279), *mat* (114); *absent* (1768 f), *present* (1769 f), *certeyn* (949), *esy* (187, 200, 1116), *familer* (1606 f), *gètil*, *gentyl* (491, 1090, 1120, 1267; 597, 908; *gentilman*, 1068, 2132; *gentil born*, 2090), *hawtein* (1120), *heroner* (1120 f), *honest* (2133), *ydil* (1700), *pleyn* (254,

361), pleyner (the art pleyner, 1607 f), seynt (131, 313, 416), subtyl (1556), sufficiaunt (3 *syll.*, 1067, 2524), vileyn (1824); vèrray, verry (259, 297, 360, 1068, 2479; 1478); coy (1548). In 2625 *voyd* should be *voyded*. For *sekyr* (Lat. *securus*), cf. 2660 f. — For *totulour* in a half-adj. use, see 353 (cf. Skeat's n.).

§ 53. In the definite form (that is, when preceded by a possessive or demonstrative pronoun or by the definite article) monosyllabic adjectives take an inflectional *-e*. (Child, § 32; ten Brink, § 235.)

#### I. Ordinals.

the ferste morwe, 1230; the ferste heuene, 2236.

the thredde part, 190; the thredde wif, 1660; *also* euery thredde [3er], 1932.

the ferthe [part], 190 f (: erthe *n.*).

#### II. Monosyllabic Superlatives.

the beste red, 1987; hym thoughte it was the beste, 2439 f (: reste *inf.*).

at the laste, 948, 1682, 2283, 2295; 236 f, 2309 f; at the laste, 141, 166, 651, 862, 971, 1168, 1417; *but* at the laste (cæsura), 823.

the leste woman, 304, the leste gre, 1313; to his folk the moste & ek the leste, 2303 f; *but* at the laste (cæsura), 759.

the moste partye, 472; the most honour, 2535; to his folk the moste & ek the leste, 2303.

the nexte weye, 2481.

#### III. Miscellaneous.

This blynde lust, 1756.

the bryghte sunne, 1006, 2426; hire bryghte gilte her, 1315; the brygh[t]e mone, 1972; the bryght[ë] morwe, 1202.

the colde walle, 768; the colde mone, 2638.

this dede cors, 677; the deedë cors, 876.

the depë affeccoun, 1229.

this dirke caue, 2312.

hire dombe systir, 2377; hire doumbe systir, 2380.

Thyn fayre body, 210; The fayre 3ynge ysiphele, 1467; This fayre world, 2229; kyng pandionys fayre doughtyr dere, 2247; 3oure fayre tunge, 2526.

The foule cherl, 124 ; his foule storye, 2239.

the hotē Ernest (no caesura), 1287.

The pleyne vsage, 2617.

The rede Mars, 2589.

his ryghte wyf, 2573.

the rygh[te] lady, 2029.

the strongē Hercules, 1454.

hire white cōroun, 154, 229, 515, 1355. In 155, *white* may have final *-e* if *coroun* be contracted to *croun* ; otherwise, not. The verse runs : for whichē the white coroun aboue the grene.

This ȝonge man, 724 ; this woful ȝonge knyght, 1948 ; myn ȝonge doughtyr, 2297 ; The fayre ȝynge ysiphele, 1467.

IV. Some examples are here given of the definite form of words which occasionally show an *-e* in forms not obviously definite (cf. § 49).

his bare scherte, 391.

the false fox, 1393 ; this false louere, 2226 ; this false thef, 2330 ; his false fadyr, 2464.

the frosche dayseie, 92 ; This frosche lady, 1035 ; this lusti frosche queene, 1191.

the grete court, 334 ; the grete goodnesse, 499 ; the grete gonne, 637 ; this grete gentil man, 1264 ; the grete Austyn, 1690.

here harde cas, 1056.

the longe day, 50, 650, 1154 ; al the longe while, 1003.

This olde pandion, 2279.

this proude kyngis sone, 1745.

the salte se, 958, 1462, 1510.

V. *owene*, *owen* (A.S. *ágen*) is found only in the definite use. I. Singular : (i.) Before consonants : ȝoure owēē Iugement, 392 ; his owēē fadyr, 944 ; his owēē modyr, 999 ; his owēē sone, 1945 ; his owēē faderys wone, 2449 ; hire owēē deth, 2485. (ii.) Before *h*-, monosyllabic : his owēē honour, 394 ; myn owēē hertes reste, 507. (iii.) Plural : hire owēē childeryn, 1926. (iv.) Preyse euery man his owēē as hym lest, 1703. (v.) In *Or euer han reward to his owen degre*, 385 (so all the MSS., except Fx., Tn., Th., which have *unto* for *to*, making an alexandrine), either *to his owen* occupies only a single foot, or *euer* and



*owen* are monosyllabic and *reward* is accented on the penult ; on either supposition *owen* is a monosyllable.

- § 54. Occasionally, however, *-e* is dropped in the definite form of monosyllabic adjectives. (Child, § 36 ; ten Brink, § 236). in his rygh[t] hand, 942. This was perhaps felt as a compound ; certainly in *the godd man*, 1391, *godd-man* is a compound word in which *good* has entirely lost its force.

Genuine examples of apocope, however, are, — the chef dongeoùn, 937. — the verray trewe lucesse, 1686. — For another possible example, cf. the white coroun, 155.

- § 55. In vocative phrases monosyllabic adjectives appear in the definite form when they precede the noun (as in A.S. *læofa Bêowulf*). (Cf. Child, § 34 ; ten Brink, § 235).

leue systyr myn, 1170 ; leue systyr Phedra dere, 1978 ; myn ryghte doughtyr, 2628 ; myn ryght[ë] lady, 1620 ; Thow sly deuourere, 1369, shows the absorption of an *-e* by a preceding vowel.

In definite and vocative phrases in which the adjective follows the noun no *-e* is added.

doun in the boteme dyrk and wondyr lowe, 1961.

myn lady bryght, 2054 f ( : knyght).

But also :

hire corene white, 152 f ( : lite *adj.*).

Tarquinius the 3onge, 1698 f ( : tunge *n.*).

Note. — In *his modyr hye aboue*, 1141, *hye* may be an adverb.

- § 56. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do not stand at the end of the verse, the following rule as to *-e* in the definite and vocative constructions may be inferred from the usage of *L. G. W.*

Of adjectives of more than one syllable those alone take *-e* which have a primary or secondary accent on the ultima and are followed by a word accented on the first syllable.

The special cases may be stated as follows :—

- I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no *-e* when the following word is accented on the first syllable. The verse does not admit such an arrangement of accents as 0000.

Example : this blysfyl sone (cf. § 57 for others).

II. For the same reason dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no *-e* when the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives (ðoð) take *-e* unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

Example : the wòrthyèrë queene (§ 59).

IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no *-e* when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not admit such an arrangement of accents as ðoðoðoð.

Example : his stòrial myrður (§ 60).

V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no *-e* when the following word is accented on the first syllable.

Example : th' infynyt graciousnesse (§ 61).

Examples under I.-V. follow (§§ 57-61).

Note 1. — There is no adjective of more than three syllables in the Legend.

Note 2. — The only example of the treatment of the singular of an adjective of more than one syllable in the definite use at the end of a verse is *the fayreste*, 717 f ( : on of the lustyeste).

Note 3. — For adjectives of more than one syllable used indefinitely in the singular, cf. *brothil* (2556), *botemeles* (1584f), *dredful* (811), *dredy* (810), *euyl* (1523, 2135), *gilt[ë]les* (1982, 2092), *hardy* (803, 1528, 1773, 1800), *harmles* (2664), *helpeles* (2714), (on-) *ryghtful* (323, 1771), *shrewede* (1544), *skylful* (20, 37), *sory* (1082), *storyal* (702), *vileyn* (1824), *weked*, *wekid*, *wekede* (2395, 1928).

§ 57. I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no *-e* in the definite and vocative uses when the following word is accented on the first syllable. (Cf. Child, § 35 ; ten Brink, § 246).

(a) Comparatives and Superlatives :

*thyn grettere* part, 2213.

*the gretteste* prys, 2534.

Cf. in the plural : —

*the gretteste* of his lordis some, 1050.

On of the *gretteste* man (other MSS. *men*) of myn cuntre, 2053.

(ð) *the nakede* text, 86 ; cf. *hym nakede* made, 114.

*this wekede* custome, 1943 ; *thow welkede* wal, 756.

the wrechede engendrynge of mankynde, 414 ; cf. 3e wrechede gelos faderys oure, 900.

(c) that blysfyl [h]our, 682 ; this blysfyl sone, 1138.

the newe blysfyl somerys sake, 130 ; cf. for indefinite use, 1137, 1741, 2246.

myn sorweful herte, 681 ; hire sorweful herte, 2347 ; indefinite use, 390, 1832.

(d) hire bloody mouth, 820 ; for pl. cf. 2689, for sing. indefinite, cf. 807, 864, 2245, (blodi) 1388.

his emty schede, 888.

his fery herte, 2292 ; cf. the fery dartis, 167.

the fomy brydil, 1208.

his frosty mouth, 878.

this holy queen, 1143 ; cf. the haly day, 35.

this lusty knyght, 1542 ; this lusti frosche queene, 1191 ; cf. these newe lusti folk, 1151 ; his lusty folk, 1193 ; for indefinite use, cf. 1038, 1451, 1541.

this myghty god, 158 ; the myȝty god, 142.

(e) rygh-wis god (*voc. ?*), 905 ; cf. 353.

(f) Romance and Latin adjectives :

This amorous quien, 1189 ; cf. manye an amerous lokyng, 1102.

this crèwel man, 1805, 2386 ; the crewel god, 2245 ; his crewel craft, 2591 ; hire crewel fadyr, 2715.

this famous tresore, 1444.

the fenal ende, 2101.

the gentyl kynde, 377.

the Ioly tyme, 36 ; this newe iolye wo, 1192.

myn mortal fo, 248 ; *al he ȝ mortal brond* is hardly plural, cf. § 43.

his pitous ende, 904.

hire rèal pàleys, 1096 ; cf. *in hire estat ryal*, 1036 f ( : with al).

ȝoure subtyl fo, 2559.

the verray preue, 2113 ; the verray trewe lucesse, 1686.

§ 58. II. Dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no *-e* in the definite use when the following word is accented on the second syllable.

There is no example of this class in *L. G. W.* ; the nearest approach to one is *thȝn frendȝly manȝre*, 205, where *friendȝly* must be read with hovering accent.

§ 59. III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives (ðoð) take *-e* in the definite and vocative uses, unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

The only example is :  
the wòrthyèrè quèene, 317.

§ 60. IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no *-e* when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as ðoðoòð.  
his èstoriàl (*other MSS. read storial*) myroùr, 307.

§ 61. V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no *-e* when the following word is accented on the first syllable.  
the infynyt graciousnesse, 1675.

§ 62. The following are the only examples of the vocative of adjectives of more than one syllable :

o sely Philomene, 2339 ; o sely wemen, 1254.  
3e wrechede gelos faderys oure, 900.

§ 63. The *Legend of Good Women* shows no trace of French inflection of adjectives except in *foreyne* (§ 32).

§ 64. Adjectives in the Comparative Degree usually end in *-er* (*-ere*) in *L. G. W.*

(a) fayrere, 1006, 1600, 2172 ; fayrere, 2425.  
falsere, 2399, — a falsere herde I neuere non.  
grettere, 2213.  
hardyèrè, 2554, — 3e (*sing.*) ben hardyere than.  
leferè, 75 ; leuere, 2414, — Hym were leuere than al the world a londe.  
lothere, 75 f (: nothire = neither).  
mekere *pl.*, 2198.  
trewere, 695.  
wisere, 2634, — And werke aftyr thyn wisere euer mo.  
worthyèrè, 317, the worthyèrè queene.

There is no example of the comparative of a Romance adjective, unless *false* be regarded as of Romance origin.

(b) lengere, — withoute ~~lengere~~ *snace*, 440 ; lengere sarmoun, 2025.  
The adverbial f <sup>lengere</sup> the more, \* 1517.  
hettere, 735, *in* <sup>hatter.</sup>

- (c) betere, — wel betere loue, 1386 ; To me ne fond I neuere non betere than the, 436 (but other MSS. omit *neuere* and put *non* after *betere*; ȝit were it betere, 2089 ; til that the wynd be bettyr, 1496 ; the bettere (A.S. *þý bettran*), — I shal neuere ben the bettere, 1363 f ( : lettere *n.*).

bet, — ȝit is it bet for me, 700.

lasse, lesse, — a fortenyght or lytil lasse, 2256 f ( : passe *inf.*) ; the lesse peyne, 419 ; cf. it is neuere the lesse so, 14.

more (A.S. *mára*), I. as *adj. indef. sing.* with nouns and pronouns, — no more cumpaynye, 967 ; withoute more speche, 1627 ; more effect, 620 ; without more arest, 806 ; his thank is wel the more, 442 f ( : therfore). — *more thyng*, 11, is probably plural. II. more, *substantive use*, — ther is no more, 847 f ( : sore *adv.*) ; what shulde I more seye (telle), 1180, 2218 ; no man there did no more than his wyf, 1701 ; I wele no more speke, 2225 ; ȝe gete na more of me, 1557.

Note. — The adverb-line is probably passed in both the following:

And dede hem honour more than before

And with hem delede euere lengere the more, 1517-8.

more, *adj. use*, more prosperite, 906 ; no more nauye, 960 ; more richesse, 1253 ; a more myschef, 2331.

mo, *plural* (A.S. *má, neut. subs.*), — of trewe men I fynde but fewe mo, 917 f ; I not with hem If there wente any mo, 1227.

- § 65. The Comparative and Superlative of adjectives are sometimes formed by means of *more* and *most* (Child, § 38, *d*; cf. ten Brink, § 245).

No examples of such formations occur in the *Legend*. Interesting as quasi-comparatives are : it were bettere worthi, 243, and ȝow oughte be the lyghtere merciable, 396.

- § 66. The Superlative of adjectives ends in *-est*.

best, 1702 f ( : lest *imp. pr. I.*)

ȝyngeste, 2575, — Ypermystra ȝyngeste of hem alle.

For superlatives in the definite use, cf. §§ 53, 57, 59, 70.

- § 67. The Plural of monosyllabic adjectives ends in *-e*.

In the following list no definite or vocative forms are included without notice. For adjectives which sometimes or always have *-e* in the singular, see note at the end of the section.

## I. Adjectives standing immediately before the nouns modified :

- goode (A.S. gód ; for *sing.* cf. § 49), 474 ; goode, 272, 277.  
 grete (A.S. gréat ; for *sing.* cf. § 49), 714 ; grete, 929.  
 harde (A.S. heard), 709.  
 olde (A.S. eald, ald : for *sing.* cf. § 49), 18, 19, 25, 27, 262, 301, 315, 350, 786 ; olde, 21, 82, 273, 1258.  
 salte (A.S. sealt), 2284.  
 shorte (A.S. sceort ; for *sing.* cf. § 49, n.), 2462, 2643.  
 smale (A.S. smæl), 37, 118, 517, 540.  
 syke (A.S. séoc), 1203.

## II. Adjectives following the nouns they modify :

- bryght (A.S. beorht, E.W.S. -breht, L.W.S. -bryht. *Sing.*, bright), 2610 f ( : dyght *pp. pl.*) ; Tn. has *bryghte, dyghte*.  
 colde (A.S. ceald, cold), 762 f, 1954 f ( : holde *pp.*).  
 ful (A.S. full. *Sing.*, ful), ful (+ *vowel*), 1118, 1254 ; fful (+ *vowel*), 1255.  
 goode (A.S. gód. *Sing.*, good), 2577.  
 grete (A.S. gréat), 274 ; grete, 1551.  
 hye (A.S. héah, héh) 2614 f ( : menstralsye *n.*), cf. 709.  
 rede (A.S. réad. *Sing.*, red) 42 f ( : mede *n.*), 167 f ( : sprede *inf.*).  
 swift (A.S. swift), (+ *vowel*) 1195.  
 wete (A.S. wæt), 775 f ( : hete *calor*).  
 white (A.S. hwít. *Sing.*, whit), 42.

But, — fayn (A.S., fægen), 118 f ( : ageyn).

III. fewe (A.S. féa(we), -wa, *plur. tant.*), Of trewe men I fynde but fewe mo, 917 ; and that nat of a fewe, 284 f ( : on a rewe).

## IV. Cardinal numerals (Child, § 39. c ; ten Brink, § 247) :

- tweyne tweye (A.S. *masc.* twégen), the doughteryn tweyne, 1963 f ( : foreyne *n.*) ; by-twixe us tweyne, 2499 f ( : compleyne *inf.*) ; a word or tweyne, 2489 f ( : peyne *n.*).  
 thilke tweye, 346 f ( : with-seye *inf.*) ; they tweye, 1154 f (pleye *inf.*) ; a monyth or tweye, 2273 f ( : preye *inf.*).

Note. — For *two*, cf. 103 f, 711, 743, 1230, 1302 f, 1377 f, 1562 f, 1635 f, 1657 f, 1767 f, 2211 f, 2242, 2287 f, 2495, 2562 f, 2601 f, 2661, 2667. For *a two* (= *in two*), cf. 738, 758 f, 2347 f, 2657 f, 2695 f. For *bothe*, cf. § 79.

foure (A.S. feower, North. feuer, féor), 2504.

ffyuē (A.S. fif), 2259.

seuene (A.S. séofon), — this seuene 3er, 2120; with schepis vij and, 960.

nynētene (A.S. nigontēne), 186 f ( : grene).

Note. — *Ten* occurs only as a multiplicative, *it is ten so wod*, 736 (cf. Zupitza, Herrig's *Archiv*, v. 84, p. 329); cf. also, *And 3it of Beute was she two so ryche*, 2291 (A.S. tú swá lange, *Chron.* 897). Other numerals, — *thre* (1529, 2252, 1511 f, 2057 f, etc.), *twenty*, *twenti* (1342, 2177), *a twenty 3ir & thre* (2075), *an hundredē* (277, 285, 369), *a thousand* (1). For *on*, cf. § 79.

#### V. Monosyllabic participles (see also § 68).

#### VI. Romance adjectives :

stoute (O.F.? or M.Du.), with stoute romeynys, 627; clere (O.F. cler), 127 f, 203 f; cleere, 1828 f; fyne (O.F. fin), 673 f.

Note 1. — Adjectives which are both plural and definite of course have *-e*: false (1301, 2180), frosche (67), grete (510, 639, *substantively*, 1693 f), holwe (2193), newe (1151), olde (249, 2536), porpēre (654), straunge (1508), wise (2431), 3onge (1196, 1216), 3ynge (1657).

Note 2. — For examples of the plural of adjectives ending in *-e* in the singular, cf. badde (2597), brode (829), clene (282), false (476, 1368, 1385, 2565), grene (159), riche (1107, 1117, 1130), sote (108), trewe (282, 306, 917), wilde (2165), wise (257, *subst.* 19), dere (1926 f), fre (1977 f), grene (2648 f), kene (1190 f), lite (151 f), newe (161 f, 273 f), riche, *subst.* (374 f, 1934), trewe (428), wilde (1217, 2198 f), 3are (2270 f). For the plural of Romance adjectives that end in *-e* in the singular, cf. pore (376, *substantively*, 193, 374), queynte (2013), tendere (1370).

#### § 68. Monosyllabic perfect participles standing in the predicate regularly take no *-e* in the plural.

##### (i.) Before consonants and at the end of the verse : —

the houndis ben I-brought, 1194 f ( : thought *n.*); some were cut the hals, 292; and some were dreynkt, 293; and hust (= hushed) were alle, 2682; maydenys been I-kept, 722; wordys weren sayed, 767 f ( : apayed *pp.*); childeryn . . . for to be

slayn, 1927; hem that ben In loue forsworn, 2455 f (: by-forn *adv.*); 3e (*pl.*) ben forsworn, 1259 f (: be-forn *prep.*).—(ii.) Before vowels:—And some were brend, 292; this lyno and she ben brought, 2676.

But in perhaps two instances the *-e* appears: Hire clothis cutte were vnto the kne, 973 (but P. is the only other MS. that has *cutte*, Fx., B. have *knytte*, the rest *cutted* various spellings, except R., which has *Com*); the sacryfises ben ful redy dight, 2611 f (: the laumpis bryght.)

§ 69. Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate do not always take *-e* in the plural (Child, § 41; ten Brink, 234).

th(e)y woldyn nat be fals, 293 f (: hals *n.*); Be war 3e wemen of 3oure subtyl fo, 2559.—With 3e, *sing.*: 3e ben lyk 3oure fadyr, 2544.

Note.—For plurals standing before vowels, cf. brode (782), ded (290), foule (2240), ful (274), lyk (1569), sore (2240), trewe (193, 475), war (2387), wyse (287). For other examples of plurals in the predicate, cf. alyche (375 f), clere (*adv.*? 2224 f), dede (1531 f), fewe (917), sterne (1695), stoute (1695 f), stronge (2670 f), trewe (272, 288), wide (782 f),

§ 70. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do not stand at the end of the verse, the rule as to *-e* in the plural is the same as that already stated for the definite and vocative constructions (§ 56). Of such adjectives those alone take *-e* which have a primary or secondary accent on the ultima, and are followed by a word accented on the first syllable (cf. Child, § 40; ten Brink, § 233).

Note.—For convenience words in *-re* (*-er*) have been included in the following list. A few cases of *-e* written but not pronounced will be observed.

(a) the gretteste of his lordis some, 1050; on of the gretteste man (*l.* men) of myn cuntre, 2053.

(b) these thyngis been a-cordit thus, 2027; spicis partid, 1110; these olde aprouede storyis, 21; barris vp enbosedē hye, 1200; wordis farcedē with plesaunce, 1373; thynne olde auncestris peyntedē ben, 2536; now be we . . . sekeredē to, 2128; may there swich[ē] terys feynedē be, \*2529.



Note. — For other examples, cf. 372, 762, 1031, 1432. For perfect participles in the singular with *-e* written but not pronounced, cf. 932, 1081, 1143, 1344, 1374, 1411, 2658.

- (c) He hath makid lewede folk to delyte, \* 403 ; 3e wrechede gelos faderys oure, 900.
- (d) hise heuy dedly eyen, 885 ; redy ben . . . the furies, 2251 ; the sacryfises ben ful redy dyght, 2611 ; O sely wemen, 1254 ; othere sundery thyngis 23 ; of sundery wemen, 276 (cf. in sundery wise, 290) ; we wery be, 1494 ; they ben worthy folk, 1518 ; for adjectives in *-ly*, cf. § 72.
- (e) the hachis sledere, 648 f ( : to gedere).
- (f) songis amerous, 2616 ; with stoute romaynys crewel as lyoun, 627 ; the fatal systeryn, 2630 ; gentil cryaturys, 1370 ; gentyl wemen, 1587 (cf. 2131, where *gentyl wemen* is probably a compound) ; hire subtyl werkemen, 672 ; 3e wrechede gelos faderys oure, 900.
- (g) Ek al the world of autourys mayst tow here Cristene and hethene trete of swich matere, 308-9 ; they were hethene al the pak, 299 ; these ydele wordys, 767 ; they were half Idyl, 1697 ; how stedefaste wedewys, 283.

§ 71. The treatment of the plural of adjectives of more than one syllable at the end of the verse is illustrated by the following examples :

on of the lustyeste, 716 f ( : fayreste *def. s.*) ; the hachis sledere, 648 f ( : to gedere *adv.*) ; ffor olde payenys that Idolys heryed Vsedyn tho in feldis to ben beryed, 786-7 (this rhyme of *pp.* with *pt.* might be justified by supposing *beried* to have an inflectional *-e*, but it seems better to suppose that the *-e* of *heried*[*e*] is apocopated ; cf. thus was she seruyd That neuere harm agilte ne deseruyd, 2384-5 ; his folk forpynnyd Of werynesse and also enfamynnyd, 2428-9.

§ 72. Adjectives in A.S. *-lic* (*-lic*), O.N. *-ligr*, appear in *L. G. W.* with the ending *-ly*. The fact that no example of the spelling *-lich* appears in the Cambridge MS. seems to make against ten Brink's theory (§ 270) that Chaucer was inclined to use *-lich* instead of *-ly* when the following word began with a vowel. A

comparison of the other MSS. shows that in only one instance does *-lich* occur in any of them, — *thyn statly aparaunce*, 1372, Tn. S. *statelich*, Th. *scathlyche*, the rest, *statly* (variously spelt). It is true that there are only a few examples of such words before words beginning with a vowel (885, 1372, 1606, 2701<sup>1</sup>), but, taking into consideration the number of MSS., the evidence seems to be against *-lich* for the *Legend*.

dedly, *att. s.*, 869; his heuy dedly eyen, 885. — erthely, *att. s.*, 985, 2118. — thyn frendely manere, 205; hire frendely speche, 1084. — goodly, *att. s.*, 65; goodly of his speche, 1606. — gresely, *att. s.*, 637; *pred. s.*, 2238; grysely, *att. s.*, 637. — his hertely wordis, 2124. — likly, *pred. s.*, 1533; *pred. pl.*, 2129; likli, *pred. s.*, \*1174. — semely, *att. s.*, 1603, 2074. — thyn statly aparaunce, 1372. — hire wify chastite, 1737; in wify honeste, 2701. — so womanly, 175.

## PRONOUNS.

### § 73. I. Personal pronouns.

I (A.S. *ic*), 1, 3, 4, 24, 30, 37, 40, 42, 44, 45, 47, etc., etc. No other form.

Rhyme words. — by *adv.* (2090), trewely *adv.* (2098).

thow (A.S. *þú*), 204, 211, 215, 244, etc., etc.; thw, 759, 1444. tow (*following -t*), mayst tow, 308; shalt tow, 543; that tow, 1380; hast tow, 1822; aughtist tow, 1957; but *thow* is even more common after *-t*, cf. *wilt thow*, 1805, *hast thow*, 1823, etc. Tow (*at beginning of verse*), 2211. Of the shortened form *-ow* affixed to verbs there are only two examples (*wostow*, 487; *maystow*, 1952) in the Cambridge MS., but the other MSS. often have that form instead of *thow*, *tow*. — Rhyme word. — 3ow (244).

he (A.S. *hē*), 13, 344, 345, 348, etc., etc.; ho, 2267; sche (corrected to *he*), 882, (not corrected), 642. Common in rhyme, see 169, 1414, 1532, 1555, 1773, 2023, 2029, 2162, 2173, 2666, etc.

<sup>1</sup> Here followed by *honeste*.

she, 142, 2485, 2486, 2487, etc.; sche, 180, 511, 524, 536, etc.; che, 335. Common in rhyme, see 895, 1075, 1617, 2080, 2288, 2520, etc.

it (A.S. hit), *nom. acc., and with prepositions* (always *it*, never *hit*), 3, 7, 8, 9, 13, 15, 35, 49, 52, and *passim*.

me (A.S. mé), *dat., acc., and with prepositions*. (a) Dative without preposition, 46, 60, 66, 99, 104, 107, 170, 984, 1300, 1729, 2134, etc. (b) Other oblique uses, cf. 29, 34, 75, 171, and *passim*, frequently in rhyme. For elided or slurred *e* in *me*, cf. § 126.

the (A.S. þé), *dat., acc., and with prepositions*. (a) Dative without preposition, 481, 2633, 2641. (b) Other oblique uses, cf. 484, 538, 541, 763, 766, and *passim*, frequently in rhyme. What eylyth the, 311; the lestyth, 480.

hym (A.S. him), *dat., acc., and with prepositions*. (a) Dat. without preposition, 240, 346, 1011, 1293, 2311. (b) Other oblique uses, cf. 114, 165, 166, 239, and *passim*. him, 2461. For the reflexive use of *hym*, cf. 381, 2677, etc.

Interesting for various reasons are: withym, 943; bytwixe hym Jason and this Ercules, 1544; this man to 3ow may wrongly ben acused Thereas be ryght hym oughte ben excusid, 338-9.

hire, hyre (A.S. hire), *dat., acc., and with prepositions*. Always monosyllabic: (i.) before consonants, *hyre*, 2277, 2292; *hire*, 121, 333, 432, 503, 513, 615, 701, 1183, 2266, 2278, 2281, 2294, 2300, 2310, 2313, 2325, 2335, 2337, 2372, 2453, 2466, 2467, 2476, 2486, 2488, 2541, 2574, 2581, 2584, 2588, 2598, 2627, 2684, 2685, 2718. (ii.) before vowels, *hire*, 506, 518, 1011; *hyre*, 606, and *passim*; *hir* (+ *how*), 2293; (+ *leste*), 2312; *hȳ*, 1133. Like *it*, *hym*, and *hem*, *hire* does not occur in rhyme.

we (A.S. wé), 17, 763, 901, 2127, and *passim*. There happens to be no example of *we* in rhyme.

3e (A.S. gé), 106, 184, 976, and *passim*; as singular, 421, 447, 450, 1082, 1088, and *passim*.

Rhyme words. — be, *inf.* (1724), be, *pp.* (841), she (2127). they (O.N. þeir), 287, 290, 294, 371, and often thy, 293. Does not occur in rhyme.

vs (A.S. *ús*), *dat.*, *acc.*, and *with prepositions*. (a) *Dat.* without *prep.*, 1493, 2484. (b) Other uses, 904, 1704, 1989, 1993, 2134, 2135,

Rhyme words. — Ascanius (1139), Pelleus (1396), Theseus (2401).

*ȝow*, *ȝou* (A.S. *éow*), *dat.*, *acc.*, and *with prepositions*. (a) *Dat.* without *prep.*, 91, 447, 683. (b) Other uses, 85, 132, 902, 979, and *passim*. (c) As singular, 326, 332 (*ȝou*), 338, 398, 430, 434, 684, and often. *ȝow leste* occurs several times, cf. 88, 439; cf. also *ȝow oughȝe ben the lyghtere merciabbe*, 396.

Rhyme words. — now *adv.* (2396), *thow* (245).

*hem*, *hym* (A.S. *him*, *heom*), *dat.*, *acc.*, and *with prepositions*. (a) *Dat.* without *prep.*, 82, 122, 634. (b) Other uses, 31, 32, 44, 680, and *passim*, what *hem ealyth*, 263. *hym*, 1486, 2153. Interesting as showing how closely *hem* was joined to a preceding preposition is *afȝyr hem*, 187. For *hem*, reflexive, cf. 226, 636, etc.

#### § 74. II. Possessive Pronouns.

*myn* (A.S. *mín*), — no other form occurs in the singular. I. Sing. (a) *before consonants*: *myn wit*, 29; *myn stodye*, 39; *myn bed*, 46, 101; *myn myght*, 60; *myn labour*, 78; *myn couche*, 99; *myn syght*, 244; *myn mortal fo* 248; *myn lawe*, 256; cf. also 314, 437, 444, 445, 464, 543, 544, 681, 690, etc., etc. (b) *Before vowels*: *myn entent[e]*, 85, 139, 461; *myn ypermistra*, 2632. (c) *Before h*: *myn herte*, 31, 133, 172. 1300, 263; *myn hous*, 96; *myn hertis remembrance*, 686. II. In the plural are found *myn*, *myne*, and *mynne*, but in no instance is the *-e* pronounced. The examples are: (a) *myne bokys*, 34, 918; *myne seruauntis*, 247; *myne susteryn*, 979; *mynne frendys*, 2065; *myne dremys*, 2658; (b) *myn eyen*, 102; *mynne olde seruauntis*, 249; *mynne eyen*, 2240; (c) *mynne hondis*, 2689, 2692. III. At his day I ches *ȝow* to be *myn*, 132 f ( : *seynt volentyn*), is the only example of this possessive in the predicate.

Note. — In *But for to preyese and drawe to me memorye*, 1685, *me* owes its existence to *memorye* and is to be stricken out; cf. the other MSS.

thyn (A.S. þín), — no other form in the singular, except in two instances in which an adjective accompanies the noun. Thus, — thynę feynede trouthe, 1374, thynę countrefeted peyne & wo, 1376; but cf. thyn frendely manere, 205; thyn feyre body, 210; thyn statly aparaunce, 1372; thyn humble cheere, 1374). I. Sing. (a) *before consonants*: thyn meknesse, 204; thyn passioun, 213; thyn demophoun, 218; thyn chere, 219; thyn wit, 258; thyn mynde, 270; thyn grace, 468; thyn trespass, 470; thyn lyf, 472; thyn lym, ston; 765, thyn recleymyng, 1371; thyn name, 1381; thyn sekte, 1382; thyn word, 2419. (b) *before vowels*: thyn arguyng, 465; thyn enuye, 757; thyn obeysaunce, 1375. (c) *Following its noun*: Osteesse thyn (+ vowel), 2496; cf. leue systyr myn, 1170. II. In the plural are found *thyn, thynne, thynne* (always monosyllabic). (a) *before vowels*, — *thynne* olde auncestres, 2536. (b) *before consonants*: *thynne* gilte tressis, 203; thynę bokys, 271; thyn luris, 1371; thynę wordis, 1373; thynę saylis, 2418.

his (A.S. his), *m.* and *n.*, — usually spelt *his, hys*, in the *sing.*, *hise* in the *pl.*, but *hise* also occurs as *sing.*, and *his* as *pl.*; always monosyllabic. I. Sing. (a) *before consonants*: his pore estat, 113; his swerd, 115; his dispit, 122; his coueytise, 124; his sophistrye, 125; his face, 163; his chere, 183; his tayl, 379; hys wif, 632; His wif, 663; hisę reste, 1112; hisę myght, his false fadyr, 2464; hisę dede, 1262. (b) *before vowels*: his eye, 237; (other MSS. *hise eyen*); his axynge, 239; his offise, 367; his owen degre, 385; his owene honour, 394; *hise* emty schede, 888; *hise* ese, 1112; hyse estat, 1541. (c) *before h*: his hond, 145, 1282; his hed, 160; his herte, 830, 831; his erte, 1233; hys herte, 1764; his honour, 1648. II. Plural. (a) *before consonants*: hisę wyngis, 143; hyse wengis, 168; hisę lygis, 366; his lordys, 370, 1422; hisę seruauenty, 483; hisę schepis, 968, 1093, 1288, 2270; hisę lordis, 1050; hisę wordis, 1069; his chambris, 1111; hisę deuysis, 1272; hisę false terys, 1301; his schepis, 1453; his shepis, 1572; his teth, 2006; his marynerys, 2169; his fet, 2209; hisę willis, 2294; hisę folk, 2303; his folk, 1280, 2408, 2428; hisę wise folk, 2431; hisę sonys, 2566. (b) *before vowels*: his eyen, 827; *hise* auentourys,

953; *hise obeysauncis*, 1268; *hise armys*, 1302, 2158; *his epistelis*, 1465; *his armys*, 2343. (*c*) *before h*: *hise heuy dedly eyen*, 885; *his hertely wordis*, 2124. The spelling *hese* in *heselys*, 863, is due to the fact that the scribe originally wrote *these*, and afterward scratched out the *t*. *hise* is corrected from *hire* in *hise wounde* (873), *hise blod* (874, 875), *hise empty schede* (888). In *hire wympil*, 888, *his* was originally written for *hire*.

Note. — All that can be stated in regard to the various forms of *myn*, *thyn*, *his*, is that a strong tendency towards the use of *e* in the plural is observable; when *e* appears in the singular, it seems to be due to the influence of *e* in neighboring words.

*hire* (A.S. *hire*), also *hyre*, — always monosyllabic, cf. note. I. Sing. (*a*) *before consonants*: *hire corone*, 152, 521, 2224; *Hyre white coroun*, 154; *hire white coroun*, 515; *hyre coroun*, 517; *hire beute*, 177; *Hire name*, 179; *hire presence*, 181, 524; *hire deth*, 1yf, 509; *hire grete bounte*, 1renoun, 510; *hire flour*, 512; *hyre goodnesse*, 514; *hire drede*, 854; *hire wympil*, 888; *Hyre systir Anne*, 1182; *hyre manere*, 1504; *hyre wyfhod*, 1687; *hyre cheere*, 1746; *hyre systyr*, 2125, 2265. (*b*) *before vowels*: *hire estat ryal*, 1036; *hire vsaunce*, 1476; *hire aray*, 1505; *hire enchantement*, 1650. (*c*) *before h*: *hire husbonde*, 501; *hire herte*, 865, 868; *hire heer*, 870, 1761; *hire hew*, 1159, 1748, 2649; *hire hele*, 1159; *hyre herte*, 1911. II. Plural. (*a*) *before consonants*: *hire subtyl werkemen*, 672; *hire frendis*, 798; *hire clothis*, 973; *hire massangerys*, 1091; *hire 3onge knyghtis*, 1196; *hire wemen*, 1197; *hire 3ynge childere*, 1657. (*b*) *before vowels*: *hire eyen glade*, 1038; *hyre eyen*, 1734; *hire eyen*, 2647; *hire armys*, 2287.

Note. — With *hire meyne endelong the stronde*, 1498, it seems better to regard as a nine-syllabled line than to suppose *hire* dissyllabic. The only other instance in which *hire* has the least appearance of being dissyllabic is *And hire terys ful of oneste*, 1736, where the other MSS. insert *ek* before *hire*.

*oure* (A.S. *ûre*), — always monosyllabic, except perhaps when post-positive. I. Sing.: *oure labour*, 988; *oure wo*, 988; *oure shame*, 1028; *oure lyf*, 2698. II. Plural: *oure hedys*, 705;

oure carys colde, 762 ; ovre (*corrected*) wordys, 765. *ȝe wrechede gelos faderys oure*, 900 f ( : *ȝoure att. pl. post.*).

*ȝoure* (A.S. *éower*), — as attributive, monosyllabic, unless in the one instance in which it is postpositive. *ȝoure* sometimes has a noun in the singular as its antecedent, but the form is the same as when the antecedent is plural ; all examples of the singular cited below are marked as such. I. Sing. (*a*) *before consonants* : (*a*) *ȝoure wyfhod*, 207 ; *ȝoure trouth(e)*, 214, 221 ; *ȝoure ronoun*, 214 ; *ȝoure loue*, 667 ; *ȝoure curteysye (s.)*, 218 ; *ȝoure court (s.)*, 328, 2037 ; *ȝoure name (s.)*, 404 ; *ȝoure grace (s.)*, 423 ; *ȝoure requeste (s.)*, 438 ; *ȝoure meyne (s.)*, 1089. (*b*) *before vowels (all sing.)* : *ȝoure estat*, 400 ; *ȝoure alceste*, 422. (*c*) *before h-* : *ȝoure hom coming (s.)*, 2100. II. Plural. (*a*) *before consonants* : *ȝoure beuteis*, 208 ; *ȝoure schepis (s.)* 1089 ; *ȝoure teris (s.)*, 2527. (*b*) *before vowels* : *ȝoure eres (s.)*, 330. (*c*) *We that whilhom were childeryn ȝoure*, 901 f ( : *oure att. pl. post.*). — The only example of *ȝoure* in the predicate is, — to be al frely ȝour, 683 f ( : [h]our, *n.*).

Note. — In 410, occurs the spelling *thour* (*thour halydayis*), which is due either to a confusion between *thyn* and *ȝoure*, or (more probably) to the similarity of the old letter *y* to *þ*.

here, hir(e), hyre (A.S. *heora*, *hiera*), — always monosyllabic. The spelling *here* predominates, but *hire* is also very common. I. Sing. (*a*) *before consonants* : *hire brod*, 121 ; *here song*, 123, 126 ; *hire make*, 129 ; *here spryt*, 262 ; *here maydynhed*, 294 ; *here wedewehed*, 295 ; *here name*, 301 ; *here labour*, 306 ; *hir degre*, 370 ; *here lyf*, 477 ; *here desyr*, 734 ; *hire gladnesse*, *sorwe*, 1231 ; *hyre feynede wo*, 1257 ; *hire myght*, 2132 ; *here worthynesse*, 2537. (*b*) *before vowels* : *here stat (for here estat)*, 375 ; *hire age*, 728. (*c*) *before h-* : *here harde cas*, 1056. II. Plural. (*a*) *before consonants* : *here frosche songis*, 67 ; *here bekys*, 134 ; *here compleyntys*, 363 ; *here lyuys*, 475 ; *here faderys*, 730 ; *hyre frendis*, 732 ; *here wordis*, 746 ; *here wardeynys*, 753, 780. (*b*) *before vowels* : *here excusacyouns*, 362.

§ 75. III. Reflexive and Intensive Pronouns. The compounds of self (A.S. *self*, *sylf*) appear in *L. G. W.* in the forms *-self*,

-selue, -seluyn (Child, § 46 ; ten Brink, § 255. Cf. also § 79 below).

myn self, myn seluë, myn seluyn. — Myn self with hyre welę bothe come & gon, 2277 ; And in myn self this couenaunt made I tho, 688 ; I can myn seluë In this cas nat rede, 2217 ; And al the cost I welę myn seluyn make, 1448.

thyn self, thyn seluë. — ȝis god wot lx bokys olde & newe Hast thow thyn self allę ful of storyis grete, 273-4 ; As thow thyn seluë hast begyledę me, 2547.

hym self. — The fomy brydil Gouernyth he ryght as hym self hath wold, 1208-9 ; And into grece hym self is forth I-fare, 2271 ; And rof hymself anon thour out the herte, 661 ; As thow that he of maleys wolde endyte Despit of loue & hadde hym self I-wrouht, 351-2.

hyre (hire) self, hyre seluë. — Sche fledde hire self into a litil caue, 1225 ; That louede hym betere than hire self I gesse, 1665 ; She fordede hyre self allas, 2557 ; Sche gan hyre self turnemente (l. tormente), 1165 ; sche gan hire seluë to turnemente (l. tormente), 871 ; hire selue gan sche pente, 875 ; sche hire self (l. seluë) smot, 915.

ȝoure self (l. seluë). — ȝe han ȝoure self (l. seluë) put in meche doute, 1613 ; but Fx., Tn., S., Th., B. read *I-put*.

§ 76. IV. Demonstrative Pronouns. No distinction is attempted between the substantive and adjective uses.

that (A.S. *pæt*), 78, 105, 116, 544, and *passim* ; in rhyme, 808 f ( : sat ȝ s. *p̃t. I.*) ; *pæt*, 39.

tho (A.S. *pá*), 1531, 1575, — only in the phrase *allē tho that*.

thilke, I. *sing.*, thilke tyme, 537, 2602 ; thilke comenaunt (l. couenaunt), 693 ; thilke wynd, 1364 ; thilke god, 1792 ; tilke semblaunt, 1735 ; tilke place, 1915 ; tylke fles, 1435 ; tylke tyme, 2617.

II. *Plural*. Or hym was bodyn make thilke twey, 346.

In *that thilke day*, 2505, *that* is to be stricken out. In *At ilke tyme*, 1813, for *ilke* read *thilke*. In *til the ilke tyme*, 1951, contract *the ilke* to *thilke*.

that ilke, *sing.*, that ilke same nyght, 779.



this, I. Sing., — always monosyllabic, and written *this* except in 904, 1193, where, by mistake, it is written *his*. Examples : 4, 5, 40, 55, 79, 139, 158, 2229 ; in rhyme : 267, 348, 852, 1290, 1568, 2544. II. Plural ; written *these*, always monosyllabic, except in *thesē two*, 1545, where Tn. inserts *mad*, which improves both sense and metre. Examples : 42, 48, 320, 630, 1151, 1216, 1217, 1317, 1508, 1529, 2027, 2180, 2402, 2583. this ilke, — this ilke senatour, 596.

Note. — A remnant of the A.S. demonstrative *þān*, *þān*, *þān*, dat., is seen in the phrase *for the nonys*, 198 f, 1070 f, 1116 f (in 1070, 1116 written *thenonys*). The A.S. instrumental *þy* is preserved in *for thy*, 624, and in such phrases as, *the lesse*, 14.

§ 77. V. Interrogative Pronouns.

who, *nom.* (A.S. *hwá*), 77, 1456, 1834 ; ho, 77, 238, 869, 879.

whos, *gen.*, does not occur.

whom, *dat. and acc.*, — To whom shal she compleyne, 1799 ; whom schulde he louyn, 1042.

what, *not adj.* ; *acc.*, 140, 241, 280, 742 (spelt *wat*).

Note. — For *what* = *why*, cf. 2025, 2218 ; for *what* = *how*, cf. 1800. Remnants of the instrumental *hwit* are preserved in *for why*, 140, and *why*, *whi*, 245, 268, 758, 1674, 2231, 2520, 995, 1161, 1672, 1822, etc.

which, see under Relatives, § 78.

§ 78. VI. Relative Pronouns and Pronominal Adjectives, and the Interrogative (etc.) *which*.

that, *a general relative for all genders and numbers*, 5, 6, 17, 34, 65, 70, 119, 209, 212, 216, 223, etc., etc. ; that = *id quod*, 67 ; that he = *who*, 1260 ; that . . . his = *whose*, 1403.

who so, 337, 1435, 1456 ; ho so, 1614, 2076. In 1366, several MSS. improve the line metrically by reading *ho* for *ho so*.

what, *adjectival*, — Now what lyoun that be in this forest Myn body mote he renten or what best That wilde is gnawe mote he now myn herte, 842-4. — what so that, 2469. — what louere so he be, 922.

Very interesting are, — What for fere of sclandre and dred of deth, 1814, and What with Venus & othir oppressioun, 2592.

which. — I. Interrogative (in indirect questions and exclamations): which lyf, 276; which a trouthe, 668; which a lusty lyf, 1541 (in all three = *qualis*). II. Relative (not adjectival). (i.) Sing., whichē, 155, 1156, etc.; whichē, 996, etc.; whichē that, 196, 202, 1294, 2497; which that, 91, 737: (ii.) Plural, whichē, 24; whichē that, 18, 655, 711.

the whichē, *adj.*. — the wychē toun, 707; the whichē child, 2576. swich (A.S. *swilc*, *swelc*). I. Sing.: swich credence, 32; swich strif, 80; swich payne, 215; swich matere, 309; swich degre, 451; swich ensaunple, 464; swich an, 909; swich a, 188, 583, 1064. II. Plural: swichē, 2565; swich, 2529, but metre requires *swichē*. In 279 either *swechē* or *sweche* is possible; the former is to be preferred. Swyche as, 43. In the predicate, however, the plural seems to be monosyllabic; cf. Swiche were the flourys of hire corene white, 152.

§ 79. VII. Other pronominal words.

same (O.N. *samr*, *definite* *sami*; cf. A.S. *same*, *adv.*), the same, *pr. s.*, 692. As *adj. def.*: that samē gyse, 105; that samē temple, 1052; the samē day, 1092; the samē wynd, 1365; the samē wey(e), 2017, 2463; that ilkē samē nyght, 779.

sum (A.S. *sum*). Sing., *adj.*, sum storye, 272; sum dalyaunce, 332; sum folye, 723; sum tyme, 733, 2300; sum fer cuntre, 1418; sum routhe, 1567; sum cheuysaunce, 2434. *Substantive*, summe of here desyr, 734; some, *pl.*, *pronominal*, — And some were brent and some were cut the hals, And some dreyngt for thy woldyn nat be fals, 292-3. But, — Somē songyn on the braunchis clere, 127. In *Some for to were & somē to presente*, 1132, all the other MSS. except Th. insert *for* after *some*. As adjective, — to sum folk, 1077; the gretteste of hisē lordis some, 1050 f (: come *pp.*).

Note 1. — Ten Brink (§ 255) says of *sum*, *s.*, *some*, *pl.*: “Substantivisch wie adjectivisch stets einsilbig,” afterwards admitting that *some* occurs in rhyme as a dissyllable. The example from 127 is to be noted as an exception to this rule. It would of course be easy to emend it out of existence, but it is supported by several other examples in Chaucer’s poems.

Note 2. — For *al* and *som* cf. 998, 2384.

sumwhat (A.S. *sum hwæt*), does not occur as *subst.* For the adverbial use, cf. 397, 1075 (cf. also *sum del. adv.*, 1183).

othir, othyr (A.S. *óðer*). I. As *adj.*: (a) *sing.*, — other oppres-sioun, 2592, othyr gyn, 1784; that othir side, 751, that othir brothir, 2570; that on man . . . that othyr, 717; the tothyr partye, 325; non othyr asay, 28, 84; non othir bote, 1992; a-nothyr tunne, 79. (b) *pl.*, — otherē (dissyllabic, whether followed by a consonant or a vowel), non otherē weyis, 7; otherē sun-dery thyngis, 23; otherē obseruauncis, 136; otherē olde folys, 315; otherē smale (sc. legends), 540; otherē landys, 1283. II. As substantive: (a) *sing.*, othir, 752; non othir, 2393 f (: brothir); ech of hem hath othyr, 2609 f; In armys euerych of hem othir takyth, 2381; The name of euerych gan to othyr sprynge, 719; it may non othyr be, 2323. (b) *plural*: these otherē, 1499; otherē, 1377.

Note. — For the *gen. s.*, cf. That on schal layghyn of a notherys wo, 1251.

nothire (A.S. *náhwæðer*, *náwðer*, *náðer*), I am witholde ȝit with neuere nothire, 76 f (: lothere *adj.*).

eche, iche (A.S. *ēlc*), eche of hem, 138, 2609; iche of hem, 1223. — echon, 193 f (: non *adj.*), 780 f (: for to goon).

euery (A.S. *ēfre* + A.S. *ēlc*) counts as a dissyllable (cf. ten Brink, § 262). The usual spelling is *euery* (cf. 12, 651, 749, 754, 1520, etc., etc.); but also *euerych* (cf. 719, 2381), and *eueryche* (1608). — euerychon, 2567 f (: on *num.*).

Note. — In 384 *euerythyng* is carelessly written *eueryth*.

any, ony (A.S. *ǣnig*), *sing.* and *pl.*, — usually spelt *ony* (cf. 65, 182, 236, 612, 980, 1791, 2419, etc.); but also *any* (cf. 969, 1622); and once *onye* (*pl.*), 979.

eyther, neyther, do not occur; but cf. *nothire*, above

bothe (O.N. *báðir*) *adj. pl.*, dissyllabic, cf. 737, 834, 1574, 2493, etc. Cf. And bothe hereaftyr likly to ben quenys, 2129.

owene, see § 53, V.

men = one. The use of *men* as an indefinite pronoun (= Ger. *man*) is very common. Sometimes the verb accompanying it seems to be singular, sometimes plural; and it is sometimes

difficult to distinguish between this indefinite *men* and *men* meaning people in general :—men seyn, 169 ; thow that men wolde seke, 176 ; men schal nat fynde, 302 ; as men ma se, 520 ; lest men it espiede, 771 ; men myghte smyte, 1817 ; men may ensaumple se, 2560. Cf. also, *As man may in pope innocent I-fynde*, 415, cf. 1600. In the accusative *a man* occurs, meaning *any one* : to dampne a man, 387.

on, o ; non, no (A.S. *án, nán*) ; cf. ten Brink, §§ 247, 264, 270.

I. The full forms are found in all substantive constructions ; so also in adjective constructions when the adjective follows its noun or stands by itself in the predicate. Thus,—there *ne* is non that dwellyth, 5 ; to me is lefere non, 75 ; a wondyr thyng or non, 194 f ; non bettere than the, 936 ; there nas non hire lyche, 2290 ; on of the lustyeste, 716 ; on of the gretteste man (*l. men*), 2053 ; on schal layghyn of anothers wo, 1251 ; where se 3e on that he, 1260 ; swich on, 2401 ; that on, 2563 ; on of alle hyre frendys, 732 ; there is . . . game non, 33 f ; comparisoun may non I-makede be, 110 ; ther is tunge non, 670 ; There nas courser wel I-brydelid non, 1114 f ; ne rubye non, 1119 ; there nas non I-founde so false louere, 1668 ; porter nas ther non, 1716 f ; grace is ther non, 1947 f ; cryatur[*ē*] non, 2164. II. In the attributive position, *on* occurs regularly before both consonants and vowels, there being only one example of *o* ; *no* is the regular form before consonants, *non* before vowels and *h*.—of o perle 153 ; in on cryature, 178 (but *on* should be stricken out) ; an hunderede good ageyn on badde, 277 ; that on man hadde a sone, 715 ; Vpon that on syde, 750 ; to mete in on place at on tyde, \*783 ; this on nyght, 834 ; in on graue, 903 ; on poynt, 2543. — no bost, 221 ; no good matyr, 270 ; no value, 602 ; no thyng, 603 ; no grace, 663 ; it is no fable, 702 ; no gentyl woman, 907 ; no goddese, 989 ; no woman, 1043 ; no man, 1073, 1529, 2561, 2603 ; no cure, 1145 ; no newe, 1135 ; no lak, 1534 ; no cryature, 1632 ; no nede, 1706 ; no craft, 1749 ; no wyght, 1783, 2042, 2134 ; no myght, 1796 ; no charge, 2383. — non othyr asay, 28, 84 ; non othir bote, 1992 ; non ellis (*l. no man ellis*), 2044 ; non hed, 343, 814. Plural,—non othere weyis, 7.

Note. — For *anon*, cf. 633, 661, 819, 912, 1001, 1354, 2371, etc.

For *no more*, cf. 847, etc.; *na more*, 1557. Interesting is *it may non othir be*, 2393 (= it cannot be otherwise).

ought (A.S. áwiht, áht, ówiht, óht), for oughte I se or can, 1611; If they were brokyn or ought wo begon, 1487. — nought (A.S. náwiht, etc.), nought he sayde, 1549; al for nought, 2206; but at this thing auaylith hire rygh[t] nought, 1325 f; and fond ryght nought, 2186 f. And priamus the kyng fordon & nought, 939 f. I wende . . . naught haue agilt, 453; ȝit comyth it noght, 2509 f; ȝit ne come he nought, 2482 f; thow nescapist nought, 2643 f.

many a, manye an (A.S. manig), dissyllabic. manye a (*before consonants*), 87, 315, 1090; many troyan, 933 (the other MSS. have manye a troyan). manye an (*before vowels and h-*), 369, 410, 666, 2369. manye anothir, — And manye a-nothir that he with hym ches, 1455. manyon, — Saue wilde bestis & that ful manyon, 2164 f (: non *pr.*); fful of his folk of which ful manyon, 2408 f (: wo begon). manye. *Plural*, — 478, 516, 1274, 1431; spelt *mane*, 149.

§ 80. *Al*, sing. I. In its strictly adjective use *al* (*sing.*) is commonest before the definite article (cf. 90, 230, 299, 408, 623, 936, 938, 994, 1003, 1016, 1026, 1047, 1153, 1154, 1340, 1448, 2363, 2372, 2445, 2467, 2638) and other more or less definite words. Thus, — before *this*, 1325, 1693, 2101; before *that*, 716, 1403; before *myn*, 139, 861, 1176; before *thyn*, 205, 213; before *his*, 424, 632, 1233 (*bis*), 1401, 1553; before *hire* (poss. sing.), 2208, 2268, 2513; before *here* (poss. pl.), 477, 748 (*bis*), 1055, 1056. The following are examples of *al*, *sing.*, without a demonstrative: al Egypt, 581, 674; al day, 310, 1250, 1773; al nyght, 2253. For *al that*, cf. 1116, 209, 216, 223; for *al this*, cf. 592, 1218.

Note. — In these uses *al* is the only spelling found in G. Interesting is 1970, in which *al his compleynyng* is divided between two verses, *al* rhyming with *wal n.*; but possibly *al* is adverbial.

II. As a substantive (*sing.*), *al* is the usual form, — cf. 16, 326, 439, 440, 1125, 1181, 1804, 2330, 2642, 1160 f, 2220 f. Here

may also be put such uses as, — *al for nought* (2206), *sche it al to-rente* (820), *it is al in veyn* (1359), *al to longe* (824). In many of these *al* has the force of an adverb; in others, the substantive or adjective character still predominates. Cf. 79, 108, 117, 146, 161, 174, 224, 297, 380, 520, 601, 683, 708, 881, 1201, 1287, 1432, 1752, 1765, 1766, 1795, 1797, 1829, 1916, 2359. For *oueral*, cf. 107 f, 1024, 1424. — *withal*, 1037 f (: ryal *adj. s.*); but *with alle*, 812 f, 1734 f (: falle, *inf.*).

Note. — For *this is al & som*, cf. 998, 2384. In one instance *al* seems to retain much of its force in *also*: *ffor al-so manye vertuys hath sche*, *As smale flourys in hyre coroun be*, 516-7.

III. *Alle*, sing. (cf. Child, § 30; Freudenberger, p. 35). The only example is, *allē shame*, 300; but in 56, where G. has, — *Fulfilled of vertu & of alle honour*, the other version of the Prologue has, — *Fulfilled of alle vertu and honour*. For another instance of *al honour*, cf. 1408. The only instance of *al* (*attributive*) following its noun is, — *the māner al*, 1909 f (: wal).

IV. *Al*, whether adjective or substantive, has in the plural (1) regularly the form *allē*, which of course becomes *alle* by elision before (2) vowels and (3) *h*. Even when *-e* is elided, it is usually written; the only exception is 638.

(1) *alle flouris flour*, 55; *alle flourys*, 112; *alle clerkes*, 278; *alle queenys flour*, 1009; *To hȳ (l. hyre) that alle thyngis [to] hym sente*, \*1133; *alle thewis*, 2577; *For alle kepide they here maydynhed*, 294; *As sche that can in fredom passyn alle*, 1127 f (: calle *inf.*); *the gretteste prys of alle*, 2534 f (: befalle *inf.*); *alle thre*, 2057, 2153; *And Thetis Thorus Triton & they alle*, 2422 f (: falle *inf.*); *hem alle*, 2575 f, 2625 f (: calle *inf.*); *his sonys alle*, 2566; *mynne frendys alle*, 2065; *wemen alle*, 2082 f (: befalle *inf.*); *hire frendis alle*, 1827 f (: befalle *pp.*); *Alle the that lyuyn & been dede*, 1531; *And alle tho that sufferede hym his wille*, 1575.

(2) *allē odours*, 111; *And hust were alle In argon that cete*, 2682; *By ordere alle in cumpas alle in veroun*, 227.

(3) *Se ȝe nat allē how that ȝe ben forsworn*, 1259.

(4) they styntyn *alle* atonys, 197 ; they hurtelyn al atonys, 638 ; Herro Dido Laodomya *alle* in fere, 217 ; ffodyr modyr husbonde *alle* In feere, 1828.

V. But *alle* is the plural form before demonstratives, etc., when those words count as a syllable (ten Brink's rule, § 255). Thus, — That of *alle* the flourys in the mede, 41 (9-syl. line); Ne in *alle* thynę bokys ne (*omit*) coudist thow nat fynde, \* 271 ; And *alle* the boundys that sche aughte kepe, 536 ; Of *alle* the rubyis & the stonys fyne, 673 ; And *alle* the serpentys that sche myghte haue, 679 ; In *alle* mynę bokis saue this piramus, 918 ; That none of *alle* hyre frendis myght it lette, 732 ; And *alle* hire frendis for to saue hire trouthe, 798 ; And can so wel don *alle* hise obeysauncis, 1268 ; That were trewe in leuyng *al* here lyuys, 475.

Note 1. — The number may be doubtful in : ffleth ek the queen with *al* hire porpere sayl, 654 (cf. Florus's *veloque purpureo*) ; The furies thre with al here mortal brond, 2252 (cf. Eumenides *tenuere faces de funere raptas*).

*Alle* is pretty certainly plural in That they ben lyk of *alle* thyng *I-wis*, 1569.

Note 2. — Folk is plural in, — with al his *folk* to don what so hem leste, 1113. It is singular in, — To hors is al his lusty *folk* I-go, 1193 ; doubtful in, — And al his *folk* to go that best go myghte, 653 ; And al his *folk* with tempest al to-dryuyn, 1280. In 1151, G. Tr. Th. have, — With *alle* these newe lusty *folk* of troye ; S. has *thise* ; A9. *thes* ; Fx., Tn., *this* ; B. *the* ; P. þ ; A9. omits *newe*.<sup>1</sup> — There is no clear example of *world* as plural ; perhaps the most probable instance is, — Of al this world he louyth no thyng so, 2282 ; the rest are clearly singular : — ffor al the *world* ryght as the dayseye, 150 ; Ek al te *world* of autourys mayst tow here, 308 ; That al the *world* he sette at no value, 602 ; That al the *world* to me [n]is half so lef, 2636.

Ten Brink (§ 255) leaves the impression that it is only before the article or other defining word that *alle* (pl.) is monsyllabic ; but cf. 3is god wot. lx. bokys olde & newe Hast thow thyn self *alle*<sup>2</sup> ful of storyis grete, 273-4 ; Myne seruautys ben *alle* wyse &

<sup>1</sup> R. agrees with B. A 28. is mutilated.

<sup>2</sup> Adverbial ?

honourable, 247 ; I[s] holdyn good of *alle* that euer hire knowe, 1709.

In only one of these (1709), have we opportunity for a comparison of the other MSS., — 247 and 273-4 not being in any MS. but G.; — but in 1708 all the MSS. agree except Ag., which omits *euere*. These examples indicate that while *alle* was the proper form for the plural, it was reduced to *alle* from rhythmical considerations, either occasionally, as in the examples last cited, or regularly, as in phrases like *alle the* (+ noun accented on the first syllable), which have a constant cadence.

§ 81. The genitive plural of *al* (cf. Child, § 44 ; ten Brink, § 255) remains in *L. G. W.* in, — aldir ferst, 2635 ; aldermost, 2117 ; aldyrmost, 2567.

### ADVERBS AND OTHER PARTICLES.

§ 82. Anglo-Saxon adverbs in *-e* preserve their termination in *L. G. W.* (Child, § 69 ; ten Brink, § 246, Anm.). Here are also included a few later analogical formations. For *blyue*, *inne*, *oute*, *thanne*, *whanne*, cf. § 88.

blythe, 1473 f ( : aryue *inf.*) is an error for *blyue*.

bryghte (A.S. beorhte), 163 f, 1428 f ( : syghte *n.*).

depe (A.S. déope), 1234 ; depe, 368, 1285, 1954.

dere (A.S. déore, W.S. díere, díre), 212 f ( : apeere *inf.*), 372 f ( : here *adv.*), 1387 f ( : chere *n.*).

fayre (A.S. fæg(e)re), 180 f ( : thebonoyre = *debonaire*) ; fayre, 1502, 2294.

faste (A.S. fæste), 790 f, 826 f, 1220 f, 2004 f ; 234, 788, 2091, 2143, 2607, 2688, 2720 ; faste, 950, 1712, 2623 ; faste, 2189, 2487.

foule (A.S. fúle (?), cf. Wulfstan's Address, Sweet, l. 186, but *fúle* there may be *adj. pl.* ; L., O. fule), 1307.

frosch (+ *vowel*), 1207 ; frorsche, 98.

harde (A.S. hearde), 260, 2483.

hye (A.S. héa(h), héage), 1200 f ( : wrye *pp.*) ; hye, 2195.

hote (A.S. háte), 260 f ( : dote *inf.*).

I-lyke (A.S. gelíce), 731 ; I-like, 57.



longe (A.S. lange, longe), 2271 f (: stronge *adj. pl.*), 2261 f (: longe *inf.*); 1696; longe, 1185; It were to longe lest that I schulde slake, 619.

loude (A.S. hlúde), 1808.

newe (A.S. néowe, W.S. nī(e)we, nýwe), 1122; I-benchede newe with turwis frorsche I-grawe, 98, — the other version has, *That benched was on turves fressh y-grave.*

softe (A.S. sófte), 2708 f (: lofte *n.*).

sore (A.S. sáre), 1296, 1728, 1913, 2260; sore, 731, 814; sorz, 53, 127, 300.

stille (A.S. stille), 816 f (: fyle *n.*), 1491 f (: wille *n.*).

swete (A.S. swóte *adv.*, swéte *adj.*), 761 f (: mete *inf.*).

swythe (A.S. swíðe), His swerd sche tok aswythe, 913 f (: kythe *inf.*).

vnnethe (A.S. unéaðe), 2437; onethe, 33; unnethe, 2427; onethe, 959; cf. *unnethis*, § 91.

wide (A.S. wíde), 1423 f; wyde, 978 f, 1028.

To these may be added the Romance words, — *clere*, *streyte*.

clere (O.F. cler), 127 f (: here, *inf.*).

streyte (O.F. estreit, -e), 723.

Note. — For maugre (O.F. malgré, maugré), *prep.*, cf. 1772, 2326.

### § 83. Exceptions to § 82.

ryght (A.S. rihte), 1778 f, 1949 f; 150, 195, 391, 738, 2619; rygh, 392, 423, 689, 2143, 2169, 2492, 2515; ryth, 2318, 2462.

*aryght* (A.S. on riht) has, of course, no -e, 59 f (: myght *n.*).

lik (A.S. gelíce), And lyk the wawis quappe gan hire herte, 865; cf. *aungellych*, 168, — all the other MSS. have *aungel lik* in a variety of spellings.

Note 1. — Cf. also § 82, under *faste*, *longe*, *newe*, *sore*.

Note 2. — For *fayn* as *adv.*, see § 85, n. 1. For *adoun*, see § 88, n. 1.

Note 3. — *Lest* (A.S. þý læs þe) has lost its -e. Thus, — lyst, 723, 2332, etc.; list, 2322, 2675, etc.; lest that, 619, etc.; lyst that, 2671. *gis* (A.S. gise, gese) has also lost its -e; cf. 273, 505.

### § 84. Adverbs in -ly, -lych(e) A.S. (-lice, -lice, O.N. -liga). In *L. G. W.* there is no example in any of the MSS. of -lych(e) as a

variant of *-ly* in adverbs. The only example of an adverb in *-lych* is *aungellych*, 168, which was very certainly felt to be a compound of *aungel* and *lyk* (A.S. *gelíce*); all the MSS. except G. have *-lyk*, not *-lych*. Many examples of *-ly* followed by a vowel (or *h*) occur; they are indicated in the following list by tall figures. The insertion and omission of an interior *e* is noteworthy (see *namely* and *trewely*). Some of these interior *e*'s are due to analogy (cf. Child, § 71; ten Brink, § 262).

boldely, 242 f; cunnyngeyly, 1485; curteysly, 231 f; dredfully, 2680; erly, 771; eslyly, 380; eternaly, 2230; falsely, 666, 1658, 2527; ferforthly, 682; finaly, 1186; frely, 683, 704, 1550; fully, 778, 883; gladly, 770; goodly, 1088; greuosity, 349; hastily, 1989 f; heterly, 638; hertyly, 1492 f; homly, 2480; knyghtly, 2085; louly, 2062; louely (= lowly), 1626; mekely, 1491, 1734; namely, 535; namely, 931, 1519, 2133; only, 1688; opynly, 2333; opynli, 2475; outrily, 1490 (cf. *uttyrly*); pitously, 1549, 1980, 2317 f, 2344; priuily, 1758 f, 1988 f, 2011, 2149, 2624; pryuyly, 733, 1018, 1288, 2311; rychely, 1037; ryghtfully, 324; sekerly, 163; shortly, 614, 2170, 2221, 2458, 2675; shortely, 1634, 1692; 1914, 2136, 2257; schortely, 789, 994, 1224; synfully, 2550; slyly, 2045; sobirly, 1759 f; sod-eynly, 197, 1045; softely, 226, 2126; sorwefully, 2183; sothly, 450, 983, 989, 1128, 2302, 2354, 2543; sternely, 171; subtyly, 797 f; swiftly, 96; tenderely, 2706; tendirly, 1732; tendyryly, 1034, 2679; thefly, 1781; trewely, 452, 243 f, 897 f, 1493 f, 2099 f; trewely, 906; vttyrly, 2323, 2606 f; vtyrly, 626 (cf. *outrily*); wikkedely, 1918; wisely (= wisely, *not* wisely), 1806; wodly, 1752; wrongly, 338.

Rhyme words. — Adverbs in *-ly* usually rhyme with one another, but the following rhyme-words also occur: I *pr.* (2099), only *adj.* (897), by *adv.* (231, 2606).

§ 85. The following adverbs which have no *-e* either in A.S. or in *L. G. W.* deserve notice.

abak (A.S. *onbæc*), 864.

amys (cf. Mätzner, p. 74), 349 f (: this), 1291; cf. *wemen han don mis*, 266 f (: this). — anon (A.S. *on án*), cf. 195, 633, 661, 699, 819, 912, 1001, 1354, 2371, etc., etc. — ful (A.S. *ful*), 64,

96, 187, 597, 2161, 2606; fful, 2679; spelt *wol* (other MSS. *ful*), 388, 950, 1387. — hom (A.S. hám), cf. § 18. — nygh (A.S. néah, néh) *adv.*, 712, 2347, 2631, 2663. — inow (A.S. genóg, genóh), 741, 891, 893, 2356; 1458 f (: drow 3 *s. pt. I.*). — iwis (A.S. gewis, *adj. neut.*), 1985, 1569 f (: this), 2251 f (: is = est), 2545 f (: this).

The following Romance words are used adverbially without final *-e*:

certain, certeyn, — certayn, 2549; cèrteyn, 728, 1982, 2519 f (: agen), 1564 f (: sen = dicere). — fyn, 1715 f (: Colatyn).

The following adjective formations in *-les* (A.S. *-léas*) are used adverbially: gilt[ē]les, — Thow that I sufferede giltles 3ow sterve, 2092, cf. 1982; harmles, — And for to passyn harmles of that place, 2664.

Note 1. — For *fayn*, cf. ffayn wolde I preysyn, 59; I wolde fayn to hym I-weddit be, 1179.

Note 2. — *Wondyr* is used adverbially in: wondyr erly, 771; w. faste, 790; w. styлле, 816; w. lowe, 1961.

Note 3. — For *half* used adverbially (cf. A.S. *healfe*, *instr.* with compar.; *healf-in comp.*, *healf-déad*, etc.), cf. 1043, 1073, 1697, 2636.

Note 4. — The following adverbs, etc., of various formation, are for convenience put together here:

ay (O.N. ei, cf. A.S. á, áwa), 691 f (: lay 3 *s. pt. I.*), 1834 (+ *cons.*). — 3a (A.S. gēa), 3a, lady myn, quod he, 2103 (other MSS. read 3e). — nay (O.N. nei; cf. A.S. ná) (+ *cons.*), 983, 1706. — eft (A.S. eft), 66 f (: laft *pp.*). — fer (A.S. feor(r)), nat fer from, 1049. — forth (A.S. forð), 781, 2349; emforth, 2132; ferforth, 690, 1598. — tho (A.S. þá), 144, 718, 1514, etc. — wel (A.S. wel), 3, 4, 11, 27, etc., etc. For *as wel* . . . *as*, cf. 58, 268, 923, etc. — 3it (A.S. giet, gyt; also gieta), 76, 299, 2241.

§ 86. Comparison of Adverbs (Child, § 70; ten Brink, § 246, and Anm.). Comparative degree. Of the "old" adverbial comparatives (Gothic adverbs in *-is*), A.S. *bet*, *lēs*, *má*, *néar*, are found in *L. G. W.* Other adverbial comparatives are adjective forms. (I.) *bet(t)ere*, *more*; (II.) A.S. comparatives in *-or* and their analogues.

bet (A.S. *bet*), but sche the bet hym knewe, 801; Lykede hym the bet, 1076.

les (A.S. *læs*), preserved in *natheles* (A.S. *ná þý læs*), — *nathēles*, 4, 267, 1139, 1617, 2596; *natheles*, 596.

Note. — For *lest* (A.S. *þý læs þe*), cf. § 87.

mo (A.S. *má*), neuere mo, 1563 f (: two); for euere mo, 2035, 1239.

ner (A.S. *néar, nýr*), and ner he com, 832; and cam hym ner, 240 f (: her *adv.*).

bet(t)ere (A.S. *betre, neut. comp.*), it were bettere worthi, 243; That louede hym betere than hire self, 1665; so perhaps *betyr* 1099, — He neuere at ese was betyr in al his lyue.

more (A.S. *máre, neut. comp.*), as they comyn more to hepe, 2009; the more 1754, 1755, 1517 f (: before); no more, 74, 898, 2179, ? 541 f (: byfore); no more, 426; neuere more, 2338.

lesse (A.S. *læsse, neut. comp.*), a thyng is neuere the lesse so, 14.

Note. — *Meche* occurs adverbially in, — And fortheryn 30w as *meche* as he mysseyde, 430 : *in as meche as* is of frequent occurrence, cf. 764. *Lytil* occurs in, — Laste a fortenyght or *lytil* lasse, 2256.

ferthere (A.S. *furðor*), Or that he ferthere wente out of the place, 662.

lengere (A.S. *leng*), 633, 671, 821; lengere, 1517.

lyghtere (A.S. *leohtor*), the lyghtere merciable, 396.

rathere (A.S. *hraðor*), That rathere than they wole take a newe, 289; They aughte rathere with me for to holde, 458.

sorere, — That hast deseruyd sorere for to smerte, 490.

Note. — For *afstyr* (adv. & prep.) cf. 63, 136, 580, 858, etc.; for *hidir* cf. 856; for *thidyr* cf. 1475; *3onder* does not occur, but *3ond*, 143, and *bezondē*, 1426. For *undyr*, cf. 234, 1527; for *er, or* (A.S. *ær*), cf. 80, 83, 325; for *or*, 8, *or . . . or*, 43, *over . . . or ellis*, 35; for *eythir . . . or*, cf. 6, 70, etc.; for *neythir . . . ne*, cf. 335, 1818; for *whether, where, wher*, cf. 194, 401, 429, 487, 1995. For *ouyr* (+ vowel), cf. 592; for *ouer* (+ cons.), cf. 2499; for *oueral*, adv., see 107 f, 1024 f, 1424.

§ 87. No superlative adverb takes *-e* in *L. G. W.* There are no examples of *best*, or *mest* (*most*) preceded by *the* in the Legend.

*best*, 653, 1415; *most*, 42, \*372, 1519, 1294 f (: *gost n.*); *aldermost*, 2117; *aldirmost*, 2567; *almost* (A.S. *ealmæst*, *ælmæst*), 89, 2430; *first*, 744; *ffyrst*, 228, 2629; *ferst*, 2487; *aldirferst*, 2635; *erst*, 45; *at erst*, 2108; *next*, 678, *prep.*, 147.

§ 88. The following particles, of various formation, appear in *L. G. W.* sometimes or always with an *-e* (cf. Child, § 72).

In this list are thrown together for convenience: (i.) particles in A.S. *-an*, *-on*, — *aboute*, *aboue*, *byfore*, *tofore*, *behynde*, *behyndyn*, *betweene*, *sythyn* (*sithe*, *syn*), *withinne*, *withoute*; cf. *beside*; (ii.) particles in A.S. *-a*, — *sone*, *þore*; (iii.) *inne*, *oute*, *thanne*, *whanne*; (iv.) *yfere*, *blyue*, *bothe*.

*aboute* (A.S. *ymbútan*, *onbútan*), *adv.*, 708, 720 f, 1196 f, 1694 f, 1933 f, 2503 f; *aboutyn*, 1612 f; *aboutē*, *prep.*, 200, 818, 2253, etc.

Rhyme words. — *doute n.* (720, 1612, 1933, 2503), *route n.* (1196), *stoute adj. pl. pred.* (1694).

*aboue* (A.S. *onbufan*), *adv.* and *prep.*, 155, 141 f, 157 f, 446 f, 1141 f, 1527 f, 2364; *abowe*, 1965.

Rhyme word. — *loue n.*

*blyue* (A.S. *bi life*), 425 f (: *lyue n.*); *blythe*, 1473 f (: *aryue inf.*). *bothe* . . . and (cf. O.N. *báðir*, A.S. *bá*, *bá-twá*); That *bothe* romaynys and *ek grekis trete*, 275; *Bothe* with hire herte and with hire eyen, 859; But *sertis* it is *bothe routhe* and *wo*, 1384; *Sche* lost at *onys bothe wit* and *breth*, 1815; *Myn self* with *hyre wele bothe come & gon*, 2277; but, — *Bothe septre clothis* and *ek brochis*, *ryngis*, 1131; That *nys nat derk & hath bothe roum & space*, 1999. In 859 S. inserts *eke*, P. *also*; if these doubtful readings be allowed, *Bothe* is monosyllabic; so also if in 2277 *Myn self* be replaced by *myn seluyn* (or *selue*).

*beforn*, *byforn* (A.S. *beforan*), 61 f, 369 f, 528 f, 926 f, 1258 f, 2454 f.

Rhyme words. — *corn n.* (61, 528), *I-sworn pp.* (369), *for-sworn pp.* (926, 1258, 2454).

*before*, *byfore*, 540 f, 1516 f (: *more*).

behynde (A.S. behindan), *adv.*, 2204 f (: fynde *inf.*); behyndyn, *prep.*, 643, behynde, 185.  
 besyde (A.S. be sídan), 979 f (: wide *adv.*), 1317 f (: ryde *inf.*).  
 betweene (A.S. betwéonan), 713 f (: grene *adj.* as *n.*).  
 inne (A.S. inne), Thyn barge hath nat al his myne Inne, 2201 f (: synne *n.*). — For *in*, *adv.*, cf. 1739 f (: Colatyn), 1785 f (: gyn *n.*), 1780; *in*, *prep.*, cf. 2, 5, 6, 18, etc.  
 nowthe (A.S. nú þá) does not occur; *now* is very common, cf. 469, 508, 1959, 2397 f.  
 oute (A.S. úte, út, út of) does not occur with final *-e*; *out* occurs often, cf. 637 (+ *cons.*), 644, 858 (+ *cons.*), 1033, 1241, 2148. — thour out, 661, 1028, 1793. — out of, cf. 336, 660, 662, 686, 781, 806, 851, 1001, 1461, 1495, 1727, 2020, etc.  
 sithyn, syn, sithe, sythe (A.S. siðpám, siððan). I. In causal sense: syn, 1361, 2550, 2560, 2699; syn that, 533, 1360, 2023, 2043, 2090, 2096; sithe, sythe (monosyllabic), 69, 395, 527, 901; sithē that, 1946. II. Temporal: syn, 2629; syn that, 189; sithē that, 435. III. sithyn *adv.* = afterward: ffyrst sat the god of loue & thanne this queene . . . And *sithyn* al the remenant by & by, 228–230. IV. Preposition: Syn that thilke day ȝe wente from this place, 2505; *that* is to be omitted, as both metre and a comparison of readings show.

NOTE. — *Syn* and *sithe* seem to be used indifferently.

sone (A.S. sóna), 1299, 1973 f, 2341, 2379, 2639; sone, 1321. — eftsonys, 2332.  
 thanne, than (A.S. þonne), temporal and illative, 1169 f, 1342 f (: Anne). thanne, 17, 42, 52, 228, 263, 317, 525, 762, 890, 1025, 1059, 1320, 1322, 1447, 1992, 2020, 2059, 2538, 2696. thanne, *before vowels*: 27, 486, 822, 862, 2108; than, *followed by a vowel*: 393.  
 than (A.S. þonne, þon) = *quam*; *before cons.*: 11, 244, 289, 899, 1536, 2092, 2198; *before vowels*: 74, 1006, 1253, 1283.  
 therefore (A.S. þáre, fore), 344, 1391; wherefore, 81.  
 tofore *prep.*, 1314.  
 whanne, whan (A.S. hwonne); (i.) *before consonants*: 45, 51, 89, 224, 239, 364, 540, 657, 795, 817, 821, 852, 884, 963, 977, 1055,

1163, 1245, 1270, 1335, 1343, 1349, 1399, 1757, 1766, 1930, 2007, 2019, 2027, 2289, 2373, 2486, 2536, 2568, 2625, 2656, 2710, 2719; (*b*) before vowels: 49, 102, 184, 378, 836, 948, 1019, 1333, 1694, 1782, 2004, 2439, 2451, 2468. The usual spelling is *whan*; the only example of *whanne* is 1343.

withinne (A.S. wið-innan), *adv. and prep.*, 2011; withinne, 1302, 1511; withinne, 1445 f (: *wynne inf.*).

therin (+ *cons.*), 1427.

withouten, withoutyn, withoutē (A.S. wið-utan); withouten, 1522; -tyn, 721, 887, 969, 1022, 1092, \*1341, 1616; withoutē, 1608, 1627, 2450; withoutyn (+ *vowel*), 182; which oughtyn doute, 367.

yfere, cf. § 14.

ȝore (A.S. géara), 13, 2353 f (: *radynore*).

NOTE. — *down*, *adoun* (A.S. of-dúne, adúne; adúnweard) show no -e: cf. *adoun*, 198, 804, 827, 1479, 2028, 2207, and often in rhyme; *down*, 886, 1220, 1713, 1779, 1961, also in rhyme.

§ 89. To the list in § 88 may be appended: I. *bitwixe*, *aweye*, *eke*, *ofte*, *saue*; II. *here*, *there*, *where*, and their varieties, — particles in which the form of the termination has been influenced by various analogies (cf. Child, § 72, b).

aweye (A.S. onweg, áweg), 25 f (: *keye n.*); awaye, 779 f, 1364 f (: *fey n.*), 62, 941, 2719, etc.

betwixe (A.S. betwix, betweox, betwuxt), 1230; bitwixe, 737; bytwixe, 729, 1544, 2499.

eke (A.S. éac, cf. *tó éacan*), 2284 f (: *biseke inf.*); ek, 278 f (: *sek inf.*); (+ *cons.*), 157, 213, 218, 264, 406, 654, etc.

NOTE. — Professor Skeat seems to have overlooked the two instances of *ek(e)* in rhyme. He says (*L. G. W.*, p. liii): "I change *eke* to *ekk*, because I have not found any instance in which *eke* is dissyllabic in the Legend"; but he may have been thinking only of *eke* in the interior of a line (cf. ten Brink, § 327).

ofte, oftyn (A.S. oft); ofte, 1149; oftē, 1077, 1337, 2565, 2673; oftyn, 1378.

saue (O.F. sauf), 896, 918, 1380, 1570, 2165.

here (A.S. *hér*), 373 f, 470 f, 990 f, 1642 f, 1740 f, 2061 f; heyre, 954 f; hire, 2588 f; her, 241 f, 2687; hir, 2050 f; here, 209, 369, 444, 528, \*1545, 2454; herof, 2667; hereafter, 184.

Rhyme words. — chere *n.* (1740), feere *n.* (1642), manere *n.* (990, 2061), matere *n.* (954), zere *n.* (470, 2588), dere *adv.* (373), gayler *n.* (2050), ner *adv.* (241).

there, ther (A.S. *þær*, *þér*); ther, 63 f, 1314 f, 2516, 2565; there, 84, 270, 583, 603, 698, 713, 2529; there as, 28, 84, 339; therby, 261; therefore, 919, 443 f, 2523 f; therto, 40, 468 f, 1796 f; therwith al, 134, 882, 1732, 2288, 2316, 2666; there (= where), 785, 992, etc.

where (A.S. *hwær*, *hwér*), 1260, 2191; were (= where), 2315; nower (+ *cons.*), \*1429, 2415; wherefore, 81, 2660.

NOTE. — *There* and *here* do not rhyme with the same words; *where* does not occur in rhyme.

§ 90. *Ever* and *never* (A.S. *æfre*, *næfre*) are, as a rule, dissyllabic before consonants and monosyllabic (or slurred) before vowels and weak *h*. The usual spelling, whether before vowels or consonants, is *euere*, *neuere*, but *nevere* occurs in 1046, *euer* in 1871, and *never* in 1869.

I. Before consonants both words are regularly dissyllabic: cf. for *euere*, 180, 975, 1064, 1253, 1577, 2035, 2070, 2336, 2634; so also in *That euere [woman] wolde been so trewe*, 800. For *neuere*, cf. 76, 435, 685, 1563, 1600, 1869, 2083, 2112, 2338, 2631; so also in, *That nevere zit was [there] so fremde a cas*, 1046.

II. Before a vowel both words are regularly reduced to one syllable by slurring: cf. for *euere*, 57, 277, 1389, 1986, 2131. In: As *euere* in loue a thef & traytour he was, 1659, Fx. Tn. S. Th. B. read a *chief traytour*. For *neuere*, cf. 695, 1099.

III. Before *he* and *hire* the same slur takes place as before vowels; cf. I holdyn good of alle that *euere* hire knowe, 1709; A seynt & *euer* hir day y-halwed dere, 1871; That he wil haue hir how so *euere* he do, 2293; Ne schulde *neuere* hire false nyght ne day, 1640. So also *han*, cf. And *euere* han reward to his owen degre, 385; but not so *hurte*, cf. That ze hym *neuere* hurte in al his lyue, 424.



*Neuere* is dissyllabic before a vowel in : Thow myghtyst *neuere* erthely woman be, 985 ; cf. Hadden *euere* in this world I-be, 192, where the other MSS. insert *wide* before *world* and read *Had* (the subject is *The thridde part of mankynde or the ferthe*).

The following examples indicate that the rule for *euere* and *neuere* is not absolute (cf. ten Brink, *Compleynt to Pite*, p. 176, note on v. 33, *Ch's. Spr. u. Versk.*, § 263): God wot a thing is *neuere* the lesse so, 14 (all the other MSS. omit *a*, and begin the verse with *For*; Tn. has *this* for *thyng*; Tr. and A9. omit *the*); To me ne fond I *neuere* non betere than the, 436 (the other MSS. omit *neuere* and transpose *non* and *betere*); Al be it that I shal ben *neuere* the bettere, 1363 (Fx. Tn. Th. B. A28. R. omit *that*; Tr. *fayre* for *ben*; S. *neuer be*; A9. omits *al*, and has *fare* for *ben*; P. omits *it*); And with hem delede *euere* lengere the more, 1517 (Fx. Tn. B. insert *the* before *lengere*; S. *delt*); He shal ben holpyn how so *euere* we do, 1984 (all other MSS. *that* for *euere*); Syn that he saw me *neuere* with eye syght, 2043 (so all except Tr., which has a corrupt verse, and Th., which has *light* for *syght*); Allas quod she that *euere* that I was wrought, 2187 (the other MSS. omit the second *that*); And most honour that *euere* the shal befall, 2535 (Fx. Th. B. *yow* for *the*; Tn. *ye may fall*; A28. *shall you befall*; Tr. *shall befall*; S. *schall yow fall*; A12. *the befall*); And he shal slepe as longe as *euere* the lest, 2669 (so all except Tr., which has *as ye lest*).

§ 91. Particles ending in *-es*, *-s* (Child, § 73). This is sometimes an A.S. *-es*, sometimes a formation by analogy.

Here are also put particles which do not show a form in *-es* in *L. G. W.*, but do show such a form elsewhere in Chaucer.

(i.) *agayns* (*agayn*), *ellis*, *nedis*, *amyd*, *toward* (etc.), *unnethis*;  
(ii.) *onys* (*nonys*), *thryis*; (iii.) *alway* (*alday*), *among*, *endelong*, *togedere*; (iv.) *algate*, *ascaunce*.

*agayns*, *ageyns*, *aʒens*; *agayn*, *ageyn*, *agen* (A.S. *ongægnes*, *ongæggn*). I. As prep.: *agayns*, 281; *ageyns*, 256, 320; *aʒens*, 1356; *agayn*, 72; *ageyn*, 73, 277; *agen*, 48, 74. II. As adv.: *agayn*, 1136 f, 2148 f, 2193 f; *ageyn*, 117 f, 1270 f, 1358 f; *agen*, 2518 f.

- Rhyme words. — fayn *adj.* (1117, 1136), I-slayn *pp.* (2193),  
 seyn *pp.* (1270), slayn *pp.* (2148), veyn *adj. as n.* (1358).  
 algate (cf. O.N. alla götu, *adverbial acc.*), 594; algate, 170, 461.  
 alway (cf. A.S. ealne weg, *adverbial acc.*), 334 f; alwey, 1097.  
 alday (A.S. ealne dæg), 310, 1773.  
 amyð (cf. A.S. on middan), 2163.  
 among (A.S. ongemang, onmang), 522, 641, 697, 1218.  
 ascaunce (+ *cons.*), 2203.  
 certis (O.F. certes), 1082, 1178; certys, 2699; sertis, 1295, 1384,  
 1628.  
 ellis (A.S. elles); (i.) before consonants, dissyllabic: 295, 340,  
 \*2044, 2266; (ii.) before vowels, monosyllabic: 87, 382.  
 endelong (A.S. andlang, influenced by *ende?*), 744, 1498.  
 nedis (A.S. nédes, níedes), 1298, 2581, 2697, 2698.  
 nonys, see *onys*, below.  
 onys (A.S. énes, *Chron.* 1120, ánes, *Chron.* 1131), 760, 761, 1011,  
 1215, 2264, 2275, 2301, 2503; at onys, 197 f, 638 f, 1815. For  
 the nonys, thenonys, 198 f, 1070 f, 1116 f.  
 Rhyme words. — stonys *pl.* (638, 1116), bonys *pl.* (1070).  
 thryis (A.S. þrīwa), 2686.  
 togedere (A.S. æt, tó-gædre), 2259; togedere, 650; 649 f (: sledere  
*adj.*).  
 toward (A.S. tóweard), 952, 2406; to his cuntre ward, 2176. Cf.  
 afterward, 1655, etc.; estward, 718, 1426; homward, 2162;  
 vpward, 1645.  
 vnnethis (A.S. unéaðe), 1399; vnnethe, 2437; vnnethe, 2427;  
 onethe, 33; onethe, 959.

NOTE. — As will be observed, a number of particles have not  
 been recorded. Perhaps the only one worthy of special note is  
*fro, from*. The evidence of the MSS. in regard to the use of  
 the two forms seems to support ten Brink's theory that *fro* is  
 used before consonants, *from* before vowels and weak *h*, but  
 there are some exceptions. To display the evidence of all the  
 MSS. in full would require too much space; the examples that  
 support the rule are: for *fro*, 34, 85, 257, 682, 897, 898, 899,  
 1224, 1307, 1333, 1630, 1722, 1926, 1941, 1955, 2112, 2236,  
 2401, 2505; for *from*, 1279, 1642, 1656, 2461, 2509, 2712.

It is to be understood that in scarcely any instance is there entire agreement of the MSS.; G. Tr., *e. g.*, usually have *from* before consonants, Ag. usually has *fro* before vowels. In 119, G. Tr. S. have *from the*; Ag. has *fro*; the rest have *of*. In 1583, Ag. has *ffro forme*; the rest have *from*. In 2130, G. Tr. S. A12. A28. have *from his*; Fx. Tn. Th. B. *fro*.

## VERBS.

§ 92. Present Indicative. — The First Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends regularly in *-e* (Child, § 48; ten Brink, § 184). Thus, —

### I. In rhyme :

ensure, 2119 f (: creature *n.*); fare, 85 f (: declare *inf.*); deye, 2072 f (: seye *inf.*), 2301 f (: pleye *inf.*); gesse, 407 f (: duchesse *n.*), 893 f (: hardynesse *n.*), 986 f (: goddesse *n.*), 1073 f (: fayrnesse *n.*), 1665 f (: kyndenesse *n.*); kepe, 1032 f (: wepe, *inf.*); leue (*credo*), 1615 f (: acheue *inf.*); pleyne, 2525 f (: peyne *n.*); rede (*lego*), 1825 f, 2239 f (: dede *n.*); trowe, 1708 f (: knowe 3 *pl. pr. I.*).

### II. Before consonants :

loue, 1294; passe, 2458; pleyne, 2512; repente, 2088. — Before *th*: charge the, 538, 541; clepe the, 196; speke this, 2397. — Before *3*: axe 3ow, 423; mene 3ow, 684.

### III. This *-e* is regularly elided before a vowel. Thus, —

begynne, 1162; come, 63; fele, 508; fynde, 2198. Cf. 42, 481, 506, 1145, 1357, 1492, 1684, 1730, 2062, 2119, 2348, 2403, 2533, 2538, 2639.

### IV. Elision before *h* :

late hem, 2382; lat hem, 628; prey<sup>e</sup> hym, 1731.

### V. Exceptions :

betake myn, 2297; here the, 37; hope that, 68; loue the, 2635; prey<sup>e</sup> to, 170, 2063; prey<sup>e</sup> god, 705; prey<sup>e</sup> to, 333; seye what, 311; trowe men, 302; 3eue swich, 32.

NOTE 1.— In : Of trewe men I fynde but fewe mo, 917, there may be some question whether *-e* is apocopated in *fynde* or in *fewe*; perhaps the latter is preferable.

NOTE 2.— For the monosyllabic *se*, cf. 142, 494; *se hise*, 143; *se or*, 1611.

§ 93. The Second Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends in *-ist* (*-yst*, *-est*), *-st* (*-est*) (Child, § 49; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186, 259).

There are 9 examples of *-ist*, 5 of *-yst*, and 2 of *-est*. The only example of syncope of the ending is *warreyest*.

begynnyst, 261; callist, 1380; escapist, 2643; falsist, 1377; folwist, 2549; haldist, 252; hynderest, 250; knowist, 496, 527; lettist, 757; leuyst (*vivis*), 471; makyst, 257; sufferist, 2234; sufferyst, 764; thynkist, 258; warreyest, 248 f (: mysseyst).

The only monosyllabic form is, — mysseyst, 249 f (: warreyest).

§ 94. The Third Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends usually in *-yth* (also *-ith*, *-eth*), *-yth* (*-ith*) (Child, § 50; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186). Examples are :

I. *-yth* (*-ith*, *-eth*):

acordyth, 955, 2583; agastith, 1171; appetith, 1582; auaylyth, 1325; awakyth, 2185, 2708; axeth, 1293, 1456, 1509, 1804; axith, 390, 1724; begynnyth, 643, 1356, 2679; callyth, 88; chargith, 1189; closeth, 52; clyppith, 876; compleynyth, 1980; coniurith, 1312; darkyth, 816; deynyth, 381; doubelyth, 510; embrasyth, 2287; enfecyth, 2242; eylyth, 311; ealyth, 263 f; fallith, 1314; faylyth, 262 f; felyth, 1818; feynyth, 1266; gapith, 2004; gouerneth, 1209; graspith, 2186; grauntyth, 2665; happith, \*1250; helpith, 1773, 1931, 2330; knelyth, 1311; layhith, 1252; lykyth, 1711; likith, 2453; myslykyth, 1293 f; lokyth, 1549, 2626, 2688; nedyth, 254, 310, 997, 1098, 1493; offendyth, 378; partyth, 335; possith, 2420; presith, 642; prikyth, 1192; proferyth, 391, 1312; quakyth, 2680 f; recordith, 2484 f (mistake for *pl.*; rhymes with *corde*); regnyth, 1008; rekyth, 2612; remembrith, 1105; rennyth, 491, 1423; roggith, 2708; saylyth, \*951, 1942, 2162; saylith, 2176;

seylyth, 1462; sikith, 1310; sikyth, \*1165; sykyth, 1292 f; shakyth, 2681 f; shapith, 1289; slepith, 2657; smylith, 2123; spekyth, 2210; streynyth, 2684; styngith, 645, 1730; swounnyth, 872, 1314; tellyth, 284, 514, 1558, 2220; telleth, 1396; thankyth, 1149; turnyth, 2307; vsyth, 342; walkyth, 970, 1759; waxeth, 2683; waylyth, 1166; werkyth, 1385.

NOTE. — Forms in *-yt* occur; cf. *seyt*, 1022, *thynkyt*, 984. Due merely to bad spelling are *coruptyh*, 2237, *coueyth* (= *coueytyth*), 1755. One example of the third person singular in *-ys* occurs, — *begynnys*, \*51; but the other version has *gynneth*.

II. The Present Indicative Third Person Singular in *-yth*, *-ith*, *-th* (*-e-* syncopated) is not uncommon. As we should expect, we find examples of it in verbs ending (*a*) in a vowel or (*b*) in *m*, *r*, *v*; but (*c*) it is not confined to such verbs.

(*a*) Verbs ending in a vowel :

cryeth, 1311; ffileth, 654; lyth, 60, 84, 395, 439, 498, 872, 1176, 1181, 1292, 2438; seth, 2007; seyth, 305, 336, 725, 1465, 1683, 1804; seith, 280, 281; seyt, 1022. But, *conueyeth*, 2305; cryeth, 2328; preyeth, 1567, 2267; weyeth, 1788. Here may also be put : *dawith*, 46; *drawith*, 52; *knowith*, 278. An interesting example of the attraction of the verb from the first to the third person is *Tak hed what I thyn fadyr seyth the here*, 2627.

(*b*) Verbs in *m*, *r*, *v* :

beryth, 515, 2298; comyth, 143, 805, 858, 1160, 1758, 1780, 2026, 2405, 2672, 2709; dryuyth, 644; 3euyth, 441. — But, *aryuyth*, 2309; *beryth*, 620; *comyth*, 2148, 2395; *hereth*, 327; *keruyth*, 2334; *louyth*, 260, 906, 2282; *louith*, 2286; *pouryth*, 648; *receuyth*, 700, 1663; *repreuith*, 1566; *romyth*, 1497; *sauyth*, 1642; *seruyth*, 77; *stakerith*, 2687.

(*c*) Other verbs :

biddyth, 647 (cf. § 95); bryngith, 647; dwellyth, 5; kyssith, 2208; lestyth, 2241; makyth, 1228, 2380 f; takyth, 343, 2162, 2173, 2381 f; thynkyth (*videtur*), 2001. — But, *kyssith*, 878; *lestyth*, 2031; *lastith*, 693; *makyth*, 1256; *makith*, 1166; *takyth*, 2666; *takith*, 1302; *thynkyth* (*videtur*), 1300, 1729, 2134; *thynkith*,

1173, 1954; thynkyt, 984; *thynkyth* in *lyst that he thynkyth longe*, 2671, is a mistake; most of the MSS. read *lyst that hym thynke to longe*.

§ 95. The following examples of the Third Person Singular in *-t* from verbs in *t*, *d*, *s* occur (Child, § 51; ten Brink, § 186):

et, 1389; fynt, 1798; lest(e), 2179; lyst(e), 2490; put, 652; rent, 646; rit, 1776; rist, 810, 887, 2680, 2687; vprist, 1188; sit, 816, 1201, 1206, 1832, 1834, 2423; stant, 2245.

But, — agastith, 1171; biddyth, 647; bytith, 378 f; fyndith, 1499; huntith, 2414; kytheth, 492; lastith, cf. § 94, II. (c); ledyth, 1507; leftyth, 882; lestyth (*lubet*), 480, 496; restith, 238; ryseth, 49; rysith, 2208; smytyth, 379 f; weddyth, 1660; zeldyth, 886. — For Romance verbs ending in *d*, *t*, *s*, cf. § 94, I.

§ 96. The Plural of the Present Indicative ends regularly in *-yn* (*-en*) or *-e*; but forms in *-yth* occur (cf. Child, § 52; ten Brink, § 186). Before consonants, *-yn* and *-e* are about equally common; in rhyme, there is only one example of *-en*.

I. *-yn* before consonants: (a) First Person: clepyn destene, 2580; preyen 3ow, 902.

(b) Second Person: heryn 3e, 1724.

(c) Third Person: axen what, 1833; comyn more, 209; hightyn baladis, 411; pullyn forth, 2308; takyn leue, 2621; vsyn sweche, 279; vsyn wilfulhed, 375; wonyn me, 1317.

II. *-en* in rhyme. Third Person: betrayen, 476 f (: asayen *inf.*), is the only example.

III. *-yn* before vowels. Third Person: brennyn, 2610; falsyn, 1377; houyn, 1196; hurtelyn, 638; lyuyn, 1531; walkyn, 990.

IV. *-yn*, *-n*. (a) Second Person: seyn, 88, 169; spekyn of, 665.

(b) Third Person: tabouryn in, 330.

V. *-e* before consonants. (a) Second Person: come nat, 2220; holde forward, 2500; swere manye, 666.

(b) Third Person: acorde bothe, 1743; calle dayesysis, 43; come nat, 2518; daunce they, 2157; dryue til, 2620; endure for, 287; feste they, 2157; gynne for, 38; wexe foule, 2240.

VI. *-e* in rhyme. (a) Second Person : begile, 2550 f ( : while *n.*); defye, 126 f ( : sophistrye *n.*).

(b) Third Person : comende, 1688 f ( : legende *n.*); dwelle, 2259 f ( : telle *inf.*); here, 2402 f ( : matere *n.*); kylle, 1216 f ( : wille *n.*); knowe, 1709 f ( : trowe 1 s. *pr. I.*); lye, 609 f ( : chyualrye *n.*); nemene (*for* neuene,) 2237 f ( : heuene *n.*); spende, 650 f ( : ende *n.*); synge, 2157 f ( : knowynge *n.*); wende, 2621 f ( : ende *n.*); wryte, 350 f ( : endyte *inf.*).

VII. *-e* elided before vowels. (a) Second Person : swere, 2102 ; (b) Third Person : tretre, 309.

VIII. Apocope of *-e*. (a) Second Person : gete na, 1557 ; (b) Third Person : blame they, 263 ; sey these, 1216.

IX. The A.S. verb *séon* shows in *L. G. W.* the following forms in the Plural of the Present Indicative : sen 3e, 1260 ; se 3e, 1259.

§ 97. The following examples of the Plural of the Present Indicative in *-yth* occur :

comyth, \*639 ; rennyth, 641 (of the other MSS., three have *and* ; one has *ran* ; one, *raf* ; one, *rase* ; one, *than* ; one, *thenn*) ; seyth, 1725 (*How seyth men ?*).

§ 98. No example of the Plural in *-es* occurs in *L. G. W.*

§ 99. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in *L. G. W.* (cf. Child, § 53 ; ten Brink, §§ 162, 165, 168-170).

(a) Stems originally short, — *lette*, *schette*, *sette* ; (b) stems originally long, — *agaste*, *agilte*, *delede*, *felte*, *fette*, *gerde*, *grette*, *herde*, *kepte*, *kiste*, *lafte*, *laste*, *ledde*, *leste*, *mente*, *mette* (A.S. *mætte*), *mette* (A.S. *métte*), *rente*, *semede*, *sente*, *spedde*, *stente*, *wende*, *wente* ; (c) irregular verbs, — *boughte*, *broughte*, *dyghte*, *roughde*, *taughte*, *thoughte* (A.S. *póhte*), *thoughte* (A.S. *púhte*), *tolde*, *wroughte*.

Of these, *delede*, *semede* (cf. ten Brink, § 165), are unsynocopated preterites formed on the analogy of the Second Weak Conjugation, and replacing the A.S. forms *dæilde*, *sémde*.

*Dwelledede* (*dissyl.*) corresponds to A.S. *dwelede* (*-ode*), *inf. dwelian* (Sievers, § 407, n. 1) ; but four of the MSS. have *dwelte* (A.S. *dwealde*, *inf. dwellan*).

In *felte*, *lafte*, *mente*, *rente*, *sente*, *wente*, A.S. *-de* is replaced by *-te* (cf. ten Brink, § 170, e, ζ). *Brennen* (O.N. *brenna*, A.S. *bærnan*) has only *brende*; see § 100 (cf. ten Brink, § 170, ζ).

Several preterites of weak verbs properly belonging to the second conjugation show syncopated forms after the analogy of the first; see § 101.

Syncopated preterites, after the analogy of the first weak conjugation, are shown by several verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon: *dradde*, *fledde*, *highte*, *loste* (also *les*), *wepte* (also *wep*); see § 103. So also *deyede* (O.N. *deyja*, pret. *dó*). For *plyghte*, see § 100.

*agaste*, 1221 f (: *faste adv.*).

*agilte* (A.S. *ágyltan*, *-gylte*), *-e ne*, 2385.

*bouȝte* (A.S. *bycg(e)an*, *bohte*), *-e loue*, 212.

*brende*, see § 100.

*broughte* (A.S. *bringan*, *bróhte*), *-e hyre*, 504; *brouȝte*, 2306 f (: *he thoughte Ind.*).

*delede* (A.S. *dælan*, *dælde*), *-e euere*, 1517.

*dwellede* (A.S. *dwelian*, *dwelede*, *-ode*, Sievers, § 407, n. 1), there *dwellede cryatur[e] non*, 2164; four MSS. have *dwelte*.

*dyghte* (A.S. *dihtan*, *dihte*, from Lat. *dictare*), 2155 f (: *be nyghte*), 2371 f (: *myghte 3 s. pt. I.*).

*felte* (A.S. *félan*, *félde*), *-e presse*, 1787.

*fette* (A.S. *fecc(e)an*, *fette*; perhaps the same as *fetian*, *fetode*, cf. Sievers, § 196, 3, Platt, *Anglia*, VI, 177), 676 f (: *schette 3 s. pt. I.*).

*gerte* (A.S. *gyrdan*, *gyrde*), *-e hym*, 1775.

*grette* (A.S. *grétan*, *grétte*), 996 f, 1485 f (both : *mette pt.*).

*herde* (A.S. *hieran*, *hierde*), 239 f (: *answerde pt.*); *-e I*, 2399; *-e the*, 884.

*kepte* (A.S. *cépan*, *cépte*), *-e ȝoure*, 400; *-e hire*, 1577, 2337; *-e hym*, 2461.

*kiste* (A.S. *cyssan*, *cyste*), *-e it*, 846; *-e hym*, 1744.

*ledde* (A.S. *lædan*, *lædde*), 943 f (: *fledde pt.*); 1097 f, 2310 f (both : *spedde pt.*).

*laste* (A.S. *læstan*, *læste*), *-ë a*, 2256 (other MSS. *lasteth*); 791 f (: *faste adv.*).



laſte (A.S. læfan, læfde), -e and, 1332; -e hire, 593, 1657, 1666.

lette (A.S. lettan, lette), 2167 f (: sette *inf.*).

lyst(e), liste, lest(e) (A.S. lystan, lyste), leste, 615 f, 1244 f, 2169 f, 2312 f, 2469 f; lest, 2571 f; lyste, 2619 f; leste nat, 1973, 2313, -e or, 1917; liste ben, 1407; lyst nat, 2249.

Rhyme words. — beste *n.* (615), reste *n.* (2469), reste *inf.*

(2169, 2312), woste *pt. I.* (1244), Egiste (2571, 2619).

mente (A.S. mænan, mænde), 460 f (: entente *n.*).

mette (A.S. mætan, mætte); *impers.*, -e how, 104; I mette I, 140.

mette (A.S. métan, mëtte), 977 f, 1484 f (both : grette *pt.*); -e an, 971.

rente (A.S. rendan, rende), 870 f (: turnemente = tormente *inf.*);

to-rente, 820 f (: stente *pt.*); to-rent, 2188 f (: went *pt.*).

roughthe (A.S. réc(e)an, recc(e)an, róhte), *impers.*, -e nat, 605.

schette (A.S. scyttan, scytte), 677 f (: fette *pt.*).

semede (A.S. ge-séman, -sémde), he semede for, 1074.

sente (A.S. sendan, sende), 1094 f, 1133 f, 1148 f; -e she, 1564; -e aftyr, 1827.

Rhyme words. — presente *inf.* (1094, 1133), entente *n.* (1148).

sette (A.S. settan, sette), -e at, 604; set hire, 2721; sette me, 445; -e the, 1795; besette hire, 2558.

spedde (A.S. ge-spédan, -spédde), 1096 f, 1645 f, 2311 f, 2623 f, 2677 f; spadde, 96 f.

Rhyme words. — bedde *n. dat.* (1645, 2623, 2677), ledde *pt.*

(1096, 2311), dradde *pt.* (96).

stente, stynte (A.S. for-styntan, ge-stentan, \*-stynte, \*-stente), stente, 821 f (: to-rente *pt.*); stynte, 1240 f (: wente *pt.*).

taughte (A.S. tæc(e)an, tæhte), -e of, 534.

thoughte (A.S. þenc(e)an, þóhte), 1720 f (: wroughte *pt.*), 2307 f (: brouhte *pt.*); -e thus, 854; -e wel, 1291; thouhte I, 860; thoughte hire, 1755; bethoute hym, \*1439.

thoughte (A.S. þync(e)an, þúhte), -e that, 791; though[t]e she, \*2517; thoughte and, 1183; -e hem, 1976; -e hyre, 2588; thouhte he, 170; -e it, 122; thoute it, 2439; thouhte me, 107; thoute there, 603; thouhten, 1697 f (: wroughten *pt.*, see the line, and cf. § 109, II).

tolde (A.S. tellan, tealde), 91 f, 459 f, 1500 f, 2243 f, 2372 f; -e hym, 994.

Rhyme words. — (be-)holde *inf.* (91, 459, 1500, 2243),  
beholde *pt.* (2372).

wende (A.S. wénan, wénde), -e for, 1913; -e I, 191; -e as, 452;  
-e a (= have), 1048.

wente (A.S. wendan, wende), 1164 f; went, 2189 f; -e sone, 2195;  
-e out, 662; -e onys, 2503; -e this, 1226; -e the, 1454.

Rhyme words. — turnemente = tormente *inf.* (1164), torent[e]  
*pt.* (2189).

wroughte (A.S. wyrc(e)an, worhte), 1721 f (: thoughte *pt.*);  
wroughten, 1696 f (: thouȝten *pt.s.*, see the line, and cf. § 109, II).

§ 100. A few Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Old  
Norse verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in *L. G. W.*  
With these may be associated a few other verbs that form their  
preterites in -te, but are not found in Anglo-Saxon or Old Norse.  
(a) O.N. First Conjugation, — *brende, sterte*; (b) *ply[gh]te, putte*  
(but see § 101).

brende (O.N. brenna, brenda; cf. ten Brink, § 141), 2419 f  
(: amende *inf.*); brende as, 1751.

plyte, 2466 f (: myghte *pt.*).

putte (A.S. potian?), -e ful, 675; -e hem, 680.

sterte (O.N. sterta, sterta), 660 f, 811 f, 851 f, 864 f, 1350 f, 1794 f;  
styrte, 697 f; vpsterte, 1705 f.

Rhyme word. — herte *n.*

§ 101. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third persons)  
of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Second Weak Conjugation occur  
in *L. G. W.* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 172-3): *answerde,*  
*callede, lykede, louede, made, rorede, saylede, stekede, wowede.*  
Here also are included (a) from the Old Norse second con-  
jugation, — *caste*; (b) three words of Germanic origin, not  
found in Anglo-Saxon, that form preterites after the analogy of  
the second conjugation, — *happid[e], pikid[e], romede.*

answèrde (A.S. andswarian, andswarode), 238 f (: herde *pt.*);  
-e mekely, 1491; -e a-ȝen, 505; -e I-wis, 1985; -e hym, 2079;  
-e lat, 465; -e nay, 493; -e that, 1711; answèrde hire, 432.

callede (A.S. ceallian, ceallode, from O.N. kalla, kallaða), -e hym,  
2569.

caste (O.N. kasta, kastaða), 827 f (: faste *adv.*); -e his(e), 885, 2292; -e hire, 2647.

happide (etym. dub.), happed[e] par cas, 1967 (but it is perhaps better to insert *ther*, with Tr. and Ag.); happede hem, 634; happid it, 1910.

lykede (A.S. lícian, lícode), -e hem, 2603; -e me, 1672, 1674; likede hym, 1076; -e to, 2578.

louede (A.S. lufian, lufode), -e so, 607; -e hym, 1665; -e of, 2567. made, makede (A.S. macian, -ode); made, 1039 f (: glade *adj. pl.*); -e Minos, 1915; -e, 114, 120, 417, 688; -e he, etc., 672, 803, 949, 1169, 1401, 1420, 1601, 2166, 2335; -e the, 405, 416, 519; makede and, 1248.

pikid (cf. O.N. pikka), pikkid of, 2467.

putte, cf. § 100.

romede (cf. Sheldon, *s. v.* roam), -e in, 105.

rorede (A.S. rárian, -ode), -e with, 1219.

saylede (A.S. seglian, -ode), -e in, 958.

stekede (A.S. stician, -ode), -e she, \*2202.

wowian (A.S. wógian, -ode), -e hyre, 1247.

§ 102. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Weak Conjugation occur in *L. G. W.*, — *hadde, seyde* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 162).

hadde (A.S. habban, hæfde), -ë (*before consonants*), 147, 963, 972, 1059, 1063, 1109, 1142, 1514, 2443, etc.; -e (*before vowels*), 809, 934, 1013, 1070, 1540, 1604, 1928, 2156; -e (*before he, etc.*), 121, 125, 946, 948, 1072, 2199, 2246; -e, 90, 115, 116, 599, 775, 1062, 1129, 1409, etc.

seyde (A.S. secgan, sægde, sæde), -ë (*before cons.*), 318, 446, 505, 525, 847, 1082, 1348, 1442, 2314, 2650; -e erst, 45; -e of, 956; -e as, 1183; -e, 238, 240, 2037, 2518, 2667; -e, 345 f, 486 f, 680 f, 1353 f, 1670 f, 2295 f; sayde, 1549 f; mysseyde, 430 f.

Rhyme words. — Crisseyde (345, 430), deyede *pt.* (1353), mayde *n.* (486, 1549), obeyede *pt.* (680), preyede *pt.* (2295), vpbreyde *pt.* (1670).

§ 103. Several verbs that are strong in Anglo-Saxon show weak preterites in *L. G. W.* (cf. Child, § 54a; ten Brink, § 167).

(a) Syncopated preterites in *-de*, *-te*, — *fledde*, *highte*, *loste*, *vpbreyde*, *wepte* (to which add *dradde*, sometimes weak in A.S., and *deyede* O.N.); (b) unsyncopated preterites in *-ede*, — *rewede*, *shynede*.

deyede (O.N. *deyja*, *dó*), 1353 f (: *seyde pt.*); *deyede* [sic] (+ *cons.*), 1579.

dradde (A.S. *ondrædan*, *-dréd*, sometimes *-drædde*), 95 f (: *spadde pt.*).

fledde (A.S. *fléon*, *fléah*), 942 f (: *ledde pt.*); *-e* hireself, 1225.

highte, hyghte (A.S. *hátan*, *heht*, *hét*; cf. ten Brink, § 135);

hyghte, 1969 f (: *be nyghte*); *highte* (+ *cons.*), 1397, 1705, 2248;

*highte* it, 1245; *-e* Eson, \*1398; *hyghte* vs, 2502; *highte* the, 405; *hyȝte* Lauyne, 1331; *heit* the, 725.

loste (A.S. *forléosan*, *-léas*), *-e* at, 1815; cf. *les*, § 108.

rewede (A.S. *hréowan*, *hréaw*, L.W.S. *hréow*), *rewede* on, 1237.

shynede (A.S. *scínan*, *scán*), *-e* be, 1119 (unless one adopts *be the nyghte* from S. Ag.); *-e* the, 2194; cf. *shon*, § 108.

vpbreyde (A.S. *úp* + *bregdan*, *brægd*, *bræd*), 1671 f (: *seyde pt.*).

wepte (A.S. *wépan*, *wéop*), *-e* tendirly, 2316; cf. *wep*, § 108.

§ 104. A few Romance verbs show syncopated preterites in *-de*, *-te*, after the analogy of the First Weak Conjugation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 180, 182).

aspiede, 1471 (3 syl., cf. the rhyme of *espiede* with *wide*, 1422). —

caughte to, 1750; caughte hire, 1911; caught a, 2654. — cryede

Thesius, 2190; cryede o, 2200. — obeyede, 681 f (: *seyde pt.*).

— passede he, 1530 (*paste* does not occur). — preyede, 2294 f

(: *seyde pt.*); prayede, 2487 f (: *trayed pt.*); preyede to, 1571;

preyede, 2367. — quitte hire, 1918. — trayede, 2486 f (: *prayed pt.*).

§ 105. Most verbs of Romance derivation make their preterites (first and third persons singular) in *-ed*, *-ede*, *-ede*, without syncopation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 179).

apiered Enyas, 1057; aryuede he, 959, 1463; assentede to, 1596;

auisede hire, 867; cōmaunded hire, 1091; compassede he, 1414;

compleynede hym, 1968; deseruyd, 2385 f (: *seruyd pp.*);

desirede ȝow, 2117; feynede hire, 2375; formede man, 1792;

medeled she, 874; regnede his, 582; rescuëd hire, 503; salewede hym, 241; surmountede pleylnly, 111; uanyschid anon, 1001.

§ 106. The Indicative Second Person Singular of Weak Preterites ends in *-ist* (cf. Child, § 53c; ten Brink, § 194).

feltist, 1379; madist, 1371, 2231; haddist thow, 1676; ne had-dist thow, 2717; woldist, 1378; noldist thow, 268, 530; aughtist tow, 1957; sholdist, 1820; myghtist, 1444; myghtyst, 985.

§ 107. Second Person Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs (cf. Child, § 54b; ten Brink, § 193).

bar it, 2229. — sworist thow, 1378; but six of the nine MSS. have *swore*.

§ 108. In the First and Third Persons Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs a final *-e* is sometimes written, but never pronounced.

abod, 235. — agros, 830 f (: aros *pt.*). — aros, 831 f (: agros *pt.*), 1242, 2314; ros, 445, vpros, 1741. — bad, 99, 101, 1000, 1134, 1346, 1723, 2113. — bar, 943, 1406, 1520; ber, 148 f (: her = hair). — began, 1354 f (: swan *n.*), 1229, 1757; cf. *gan*. — blew, 1364. — brast, 1033. — brok, 2347. — cam, 240, 995, 1220; com, 2631 f (: dom *n.*), 826, 832, 2447; come, 188, 777, 1079, 1739, 2407; come, 1785, 2482; ouercom, 2147. — ches, 1455 f (: Ercules), 132, 501, 698. — drow, 1459 f (: I-now *adv.*), 1563. — fel, 103, 2474; fil, 589, 1162, 1933; fyl, 706, 1423, 2207, 2678, 2686; befel, 583. — fond, 436, 832, 1480, 2178, 2186. — forsok, 265 f (: bok *n.*). — gan, 93, 144, 168, 171, 544, 545, 719, 773, 804, 818, 819, 858, 865, etc.; cf. *began*. — gat, 1649, 2160, 2572, 2573; begat, 1562. — held, 173; byhild, 828. — knew, 434, 1504, 1512, 1715, 2556, ‡ 1058. — lay, 690 f (: ay), 2175 f (: wey *n.*), 1696, 1761, 1786, 1816. — lep, 2709. — les, 945 f (: Anchises); cf. *lost*, § 103. — let, 676, 708, 813, 1326, 1734, 1919, 2093, 2270, 2478, 2480, 2624. — quod, 142, 241, 245, 246, etc., etc.; Qod, 496. — quok, 2317, 2648. — ran, 813, 2712. — rof, 661, 1351. — sat, 808 f (: that), 228, 1719, 1735, 1762. — saw, 145, 166, 186, 657, 888, 1066, 1563, 1909, 2043, 2194,

2196, 2289, 2719; saugh, 1061; say, 13, 16, 795, 812, 1600, 2261, 2345; sey, 829. — shof, 2412. — shok, 2344. — shon, 1428; schon, 163, 825; cf. *shynede*, § 103. — shop, 2569; schop, 625. — smot, 850. — song, 141. — spak, 81, 317, 890, 977, 999, 1085, 1090, 1169, 1519, 1762, 1796, 1977, 2374, 2627. — span, 1762. — stal, 796, 1327, 1333, 1335, 2174. — starf, 1691. — stod, 750, 751, 1014, 1036, 1908; withstod, 1183 f (: good *n.*). — swor, 683, \*2345, 2369. — tok, 595, 631, 814, 913, \*941, 967, 1417, 1504, 1560, 2152, 2372, 2475, 2479; vndyr tok, 1452. — waf, 2364. — wep, 1732 f (: kep *n.*), 846, 873, 2344; wepe, 2706; cf. *wep̃te*, § 103. — wex, 523, 727, 831, 1610, 1816, 2197, 2649; wax, 615. — wok, 1787. — wond, 2253. — wrot, 344, 459, 1354, 2364, 2487. — ȝaf, 521, 1400, 1550, 2304, 2366, 2584.

§ 109. The Plural of the Preterite Indicative of both Strong and Weak Verbs ends in *-yn*, *-e*, for all persons (Child, § 55; ten Brink, § 194).

I. *-yn* before consonants :

castyn swich, 2605; comyn hom, 1241; entendedyn to, 1155; feldyn wel[e], 689; plyghtyn trouthe, 778; settyn marke, 784; soughtyn the, 1515; spittyn fer, 1433; spokyn summe, 734; sungyn blyssede, 131; toldyn whil, 747; vsedyn tho, 787; vsyn tho, 1830; wonedyn so, 712.

II. *-yn*, *-en* in rhyme :

wentyn, 632 f (: stente *pt. pl. I.*); wroughten, 1696 f (: thouȝten *imp. pt. I.*); but in 1696 of course the proper reading is *wroughte* : *thoughte*; indeed *wroughte* is almost certainly *sing.*, having as its subject *the sege* (cf. Kittredge, *Studies and Notes*, I, 7).

III. *-yn* before vowels :

deiȝedyn as, 291; dwelȝedyn abowe, 1965; herdyn al, 1970; loke-dyn vpon, 1972; songyn on, 127, songyn as, 201; styntyn al, 197; wentyn in, 199.

IV. *-yn* before *h* :

madyn hym, 2423; settyn hem, 226.

V. *-yn* syncopated :

answerden hire, 2193 ; stodyn on, 1971.

VI. *-ē* before consonants :

caste lot, 1933 ; chose to, 290 ; dredde so, 1813 ; founde they, 1025 ; gunne mete, 134 ; kepte so, 301 (cf. kepid they (*-id corr.*), 294) ; louēde so, 1812 ; wente from, 2505.

VII. *-e* in rhyme

brente, 731 f ( : assente *inf.*) ; dyghte, 1712 f ( : lyghte *pt. pl. I.*) ; grette, 1502 f ( : mette *pt. pl. I.*) ; leyde, 2501 f ( : seyde *pt. pl. I.*) ; lyghte, 1713 f ( : dyghte *pt. pl. I.*) ; mente, 235 f ( : bente *n.*) , ment[e], 140 f ( : entent[e] *n.*) ; mette, 733 f ( : lette *3 s. pt. I.*) , 1503 f ( : grette *pt. pl. I.*) ; seyde, 2500 f ( : leyde *pt. I.*) ; stente, 633 f ( : wentyn *pt. pl. I.*) ; sterte, 1301 f ( : herte *n.*) ; wente, 1241 f ( : stynte *3 s. pt. I.*) .

VIII. *-e* elided before vowels :

demedē as, 1244 ; gunne espye, 195 ; gan abyde, 1718 ; knelede adoun, 198 ; mette in, 1643 ; stode in, 747 ; wente and, 628 ; wente as, 655 ; wex in, 727 ; wroughte in, 772.

IX. *-e* elided before *h* :

emblemyschid hire, 1737 ; gonne hire, 699 ; lafte hise, 968 ; made hire, 2598 ; peynede hem, 636.

X. Apocope. There is no genuine instance in the interior of a verse, unless it be *kepid*, 294 ; but *kepte* occurs in 301, and *-id* here is due to correction of some other spelling. A genuine example of apocope at the end of a verse is probably *heryed*, 786 f ( : beryed *pp. pl.*) ; this and *deseruyd* (3 s. pt. I.), 2385 f ( : seruyd *pp. sing.*) , are the only instances in the *Legend* of a perfect participle rhyming with a weak preterite.

§ 110. The Singular of the Present Subjunctive of both Strong and Weak verbs ends in *-e* in all persons (Child, § 56 · ten Brink, §§ 184, 188).

- I. First Person : (a) Before consonants : If I profre 3ow, 2060.  
 (b) In rhyme : If that I therof lye, 2059 f ( : compaignye *n.*) .  
 (c) Elision : If I euere cleyme othir, 2070 ; or I fynde a, 703 ;

What ende that I make it, 1774; Now is it tyme I make an ende, 2341; Thaw that I speke a, 457; but I ȝow serve as, 2062.

II. Second Person : (a) Before consonants : ȝif it be so that thou a-vise the, 497. (b) In rhyme : I wele that thou begynne, 542 f (: wyne *inf.*); But & thou crye or noyse make, 1790 f (: awake 3 s. *pr. S.*). (c) Elision : But thou concente and werke aftyr, 2645; but & thou crye (*n. ?*) or noyse make, 1790; That . . . thou make of this wif, 539.

III. Third Person : (a) Before consonants : If it so falle that, 855; But god forbode but, 910 (cf. But goddis forbode but men schulde leue, 10, where the other MSS. have *But god forbode*); If it happe me, 66; if now ony woman helpe the, 1956; whil that hym lefte lyf, 1239 (*l. laste*); and it lyke ȝow, 245; If that like ȝow, 2396; that from myne bokys make me to gon (*l. maketh*), 34; [god] sende the, 2340; god thanke ȝow, 1625; god wreke the, 2340; god . . . fforȝelde ȝow, 447. (b) In rhyme : If there ony creature awake, 1791 f (: make 2 s. *pr. S.*); thou so be that boot here ne cone, †2215 f (: become *inf.*); a twenty deuelewey the wynd hym dryue, 2177 f (: †swythe *adv.*, *l. blyue*); doth with hym what ȝow leste, 439 f (: requeste *n.*); whil Iuppiter it leste, 1338 f (: onreste *n.*); If ȝow leste, 88 f (: geste *n.*); If that ȝow leste, 2387 f (: wiste 3 s. *pt. I.*); as long as euer the leste, 2669 f (: to reste *n.*); As wisely Iupiter myn soule sawe, 1806 f (: knawe *n.*); god me grace sende, 2457 f (: legende *n.*); god to euery louere synde, 905 f (: ende *n.*); thou Ioue hire stellesye (*l. stellefye*), 513 f (: dayesye *n.*); til that myn herte sterue, 2035 f (: serve *inf.*); and taketh non hed of what matere he take, 343 f (: make *inf.*); or that she forth wente, 2714 f (: hente *inf.*). (c) Elision : (a) before vowels, — ȝif hire vengeaunce falle on, 2523; god from swich on kepe vs, 2401; preyse euery man, 1703; god shilde it, 2082; (β) before *h*, — redē he ouyde, 1367; The deuyl quyte hym, 2227; The deuyl settē here soules, 2493; god . . . leue hereaftyr, 2086.

NOTE. — In, I prere (*l. preyre*) to god ȝeue hire myschaunce, 333, there may be a confusion of constructions; cf. I preyre god let oure hedys neuere ake, 705.



## § 111. Exceptions to § 110.

I. First Person : ȝif that I leue || thyn, 1381; Not that I trowe || to, 1358.

II. Second Person : If thou sey nay, 2661.

III. Third Person : If it so falle that, 855; I preye to god that eueure falle sche fayre, 180; and lenē me, 2083; Rygh as ȝow leste || that, 2042; God sauē myn lord, 1731; But synde ȝow grace, 2084; and ȝeue me grace, 449; so ȝeue ȝow . . . grace, 2063.

§ 112. The Plural of the Present Subjunctive of both Strong and Weak Verbs ends in *-e* (Child, § 56*c*; ten Brink, §§ 184, 188).

I. Second Person : (a) If ȝe vouche saf that . . . ȝe graunte me, 2038-9; If ȝe vouche saf to ȝeue, 2071; (b) If that ȝe rede it me, 1178; that ȝe hym neuere hurte in al his lyue, 424.

II. Third Person : but If that bokys lye, 609 f ( : chyualrye *n.*).

§ 113. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Strong Verbs ends in *-e* for all persons. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Weak Verbs shows in the first and third persons the endings *-de*, *-te*, *-ede*, *-ed* (cf. Child, § 56; ten Brink, § 195). For the Indicative form *-ist* in Subjunctive constructions in the second person singular of weak preterites, see § 106, above.

I. Strong Verbs. (a) First Person : thanne were I holde, 1447. (b) Second Person : but sche the bet hym knewe, 801 f ( : trewe *adj.*); thow were depe I-holde, 1955. (c) Third Person : were (+ vowel), 26, 1679, 1768, 1784, 2089, 2219; were he, 1992; *-e* his, 2400. — (d) Exceptions : First Person : than . . . that I let ȝow, 2093; I were ȝoure, 2089. Second Person : er thow thyn werk beganne, 2230 f ( : man *n.*). Third Person : were to, 619, 1446, 1565, 1921, 2514; were bettere, 243; were down, 755; were thidyr, 1475; were long, 1571; were botemeles, 1584; nere gon, 792; nere that, 1920.

## II. Weak Verbs.

(i.) (a) First Person : Than that I suffereȝe gilt[e]les, 2092.

(b) Third Person : If that me leste so, 2470; what so hem leste,

1113 f (: reste *n.*); al made he, 1420; to hym that savede the, 1955; or that the mone wente onys, 2503. — (ii.) haue. (a) First Person: I hadde be ded, 182; allas I *ne* haddë be, 840. (b) Third Person: ontrouthë || haddë deyed, 1677; ho so haddë seyn, 2076; With nonys so that he hadde a wif, \*1540; The thredde part . . . Haddyn euere in this world I-be, 192 (the other MSS. read, — Had euere in this wide world I-be).

§ 114. The Plural of the Preterite Subjunctive of both Strong and Weak Verbs ends, like that of the Present, in *-yn, -e*, for all persons (cf. Child, § 56*c*; ten Brink, § 195). Examples: lest men it espiede, 774 f (: tyde *n.*), 1422 f (: wide *adv.*) (but in both instances *men* is used indefinitely); If there wente any mo, 1227; And alle tho that sufferede hym his wille, 1575 (perhaps subjunctive); So wolde god . . . 3e weryn in, 2057; or [if they] haddyn nede, 1488; Nere that the goddis hadde of, 1920.

Exceptions: If that olde bokys weryn awaye, 25; If they were brokyn, 1487.

§ 115. The Imperative Second Person Singular of Weak Verbs is not represented in *L. G. W.* by examples enough to allow the formulation of definite rules for all classes of verbs; but the Anglo-Saxon inflections seem to be followed except in *haue* (third conjugation), — that is, verbs of the Second Conjugation have *-e* (A.S. *-a*), and verbs of the First Conjugation either end in *-e* (A.S. *-e*) or have no ending, according as the stem-syllable was originally short or long (cf. Child, § 58; ten Brink, § 189).

I. First Conjugation, — (a) short stems:

ley (A.S. *lege*), — Ester ley thow, 204.

telle (A.S. *tele*), — tellë of, 476, is probably *inf.*

(b) Long stems:

bryng (A.S. *bring*), — brynge it, 1339.

hid (A.S. *hýd*), — hid this, 2655; hid absalon, 203; hyde Ionathas, 205.

werk (A.S. *wyrc*), — werke after, 2634.

NOTE. — For *drede*, imperative of *dreden* (weak in Chaucer), cf. drede the, 1740.

## II. Second Conjugation :

lerne (A.S. *leorna*), — lerne this, 467 ; thanke (A.S. *þanca*), — thanke now, 444.

## III. Third Conjugation :

haue (A.S. *hafa*), — haue mercy, 988 ; here perhaps belongs *haue at the*, 1383 (cf. Mätzner, *Gram.*, II, 413).

## IV. Exceptions :

answere me, 267 ; Kit his throte, 2657 ; pryke thow, 1213.

§ 116. Imperative Second Person Singular of Verbs of Romance origin (ten Brink, § 189). The examples are too few to establish a rule.

Nor *ypermystre* or *Adriaue ne pleyne*, 222 f ( : *disteyne inf.*), but the other version has *ye tweyne*; *turne ageyn*, 2200.

§ 117. The Imperative Second Person Singular of Strong Verbs has in *L. G. W.*, as in Anglo-Saxon,<sup>1</sup> no *-e* (Child, § 186 ; ten Brink, § 189).<sup>2</sup>

*schis* what, 1449 ; *fforbede a loue*, 736 ; *fare now wel*, 541 ; *go now*, 485 ; *go thanke now*, 444 ; *goth thyn way*, 2671 (the other MSS. have *go* ; *-th* is due to *thyn*) ; *gret me*, 2299 ; *help me*, 2329 ; *holde the*, 468 ; *lat be*, 465 ; *let be*, 529 ; *lat gon (bis)*, 1213 ; *let me*, 1316 ; *lat sen*, 1450 ; *late no*, 908 ; *lat it*, 210 ; *lat vs*, 1702, 1704, 1993 ; *lat hym*, 1457 ; *spek wel*, 481 ; *o spek myn*, 880 ; *vndyrstonde it*, 470 ; *wry the glede*, 735 ; *writ wel*, 529 ; *3if hire*, 2300 ; *3if hym*, 2668. — Cf. also *tak*, — *t. this*, 2646 ; *t. now*, 1339 ; *t. hed*, 2633 ; *thak hede*, 1264.

§ 118. The Imperative Second Person Plural of Verbs, strong or weak, native or naturalized, ends in *L. G. W.* in *-yth*, *-ith*, *-yth* ; but forms in *-e* and forms with no inflectional ending also occur (cf. Child § 59 ; ten Brink, § 189).

<sup>1</sup> Short stems in *-jo-* excepted ; cf. Sievers, § 372.

<sup>2</sup> It will be observed that, though *-e* is sometimes written in the Imperative of strong verbs, it is never pronounced.

I. *-yth, -ith*: herkith how, 1276; herkenyth 3e, 665; leuyth hem, 88; trustyth wel, 71; trustyth as, 2561. In the following the pronoun is plural, but refers to a single person: demyth 3e, 443; doth with, 439; letith 3oure yre & beth sumwhat trefable, 397. — II. Syncopated forms: hauyth, — And seyth *hauyth* mercy & let me with 3ow ryde, 1316; the other MSS. read *haue* and omit & ; 3ow is singular. Mercy lord *hauyth* pete in 3oure thought, 1324; the other MSS. read *haue*. And hauyth here (sing. noun; pl. pronoun), 2105; so Sn. Th. B. A28.; the rest *haue*. — III. Forms in *-e*: Hyde 3e (*pl.*), 208; hīde 3e (*pl.*), 214; for-3eue, — doth with hym what 3ow (*sing.*) leste And al for-3eue with oute lengere space, 440 (the other MSS. have the better reading, *I al for-3eue*); 3eue myn, 1323 (sing. noun; pl. pronoun). — IV. Forms without inflectional ending: Be war 3e wemen . . . And trustyth, 2559–61; Mak of 3oure (*pl.*), 207, 221.

§ 119. The Infinitive ends in *L. G. W.* in *-yn, -en, -e, -e* (cf. Child, § 60; ten Brink, § 190). In *to sene, to seyne, to done, to gone*, the *-ne* of the A.S. gerund or dative-infinitive is preserved.

The spelling *-e* is very common, there being 77 examples of *-ē*, 17 of *e*, and a very large number of *-e* elided before a vowel or weak *h*. Of *-yn* there are 72 examples; of *-en*, only 6, — after a vowel, except in *tellen, renten*.

The examples are arranged as follows, — I. *-yn* before consonants; II. *-yn* in rhyme; III. *-yn* before vowels; IV. *-yn* before *h*; V. Syncope, *-yn*; VI. *-e* before consonants; VII. *-e* in rhyme; VIII. *-e* elided before vowels; IX. *-e* elided before *h*; X. Apocope of *-e*; XI. Hiatus; XII. *fle, sle*; XIII. *to done, to gone, to seyne, to sene* (with other infinitive forms of these verbs).

I. *-yn (-en)* before consonants: assentyn by, 1983; bredyn swich, 1156; conquèryn regnys, 585; desyryn thour, 1586; eylyn myghte, 1833; fallyn the, 1443; fastyn til, 1271; fechyn fyr, 1347; fortheryn 3ow, 430, 1618; f. the, 484; ffyghtyn with, 1996; getyn 3ow, 1358; g. myghte, 2370; hastyn me, 2456; louyn but, 1042; lyuyn may, 612; leuyn (*vivere*) shal, 1941; makyn garlondis, 2614; metyn with, 630; passyn may, 1583; plesyn can, 1265; preyn that, 2402; rumbelyn with, 1218; saylyn to,

1441; sekyn for, 2440; seruyn lef, 70; s. me, 252; s. 3ow, 404, 2061; tellen 3ow, 2398; tellyn shortly, 2170; turnyn sound, 1619; wynnyn tilke, 1915; 3euyn what, 2370. — II. *-yn* (*-en*) in rhyme: assayen, 477 f (: betrayen *pl. pr. I.*); cryen, 884 f (: eyen *n.*); espïen, 858 f (: eyen *n.*); 3euyn, 1925 f (: dreuyn *pp.*). — III. *-yn* before vowels: astertyn, 1615; beryn, 2135; bryngyn, 1445; cf. also 12, 21, 59, 319, 384, 426, 427, 758, 808, 843, 860, 1127, 1155, 1214, 1251, 1274, 1477, 1707, 2107, 2110, 2351, 2352, 2434, 2502. — IV. *-yn* before *h*: beryn hir, 2368; folwyn hym, 2721; fyndyn hym, \*1573; heryn here (*their*), 362; kepyn hym, 2435; makyn hem, 1940; passyn harmles, 2664; pottyn hire, 909; sauyn hem, 1917; schewyn his, 361; syndyn hym, 1418; takyn hire, 2718; waytyn hire, 1269; weddyn hire, 2466. — V. Syncope, *-yn*: herkenyn || I, 139; syndyn his, 1945. — VI. *-e* before consonants: acheue myn, 2111; axe mercy, 835; come sone, 1637; departe now, 898; departe trewely, 897; drynke whan, 2668; enbroude couthe, 2351; falle myghte, 839; false nyght, 1640; fele lyf, 692; folwe ded, 894; f. word, 1002; ff. thyn, 926; forthere trouthe, 462; fyghte with, 1800; gnawe mote, 844; holde fals, 857; knowe what, 235; k. sothly, 450; kysse swete, 761; lete slippe, 623; lede with, 1542; loke what, 2433; lyue may, 1641; make rehersyngys, etc., 24, 346, 614, 1185, 1638, 1799, 2233, 2599; parte with, 455; performe god, 2457; quappe gan, 865; quyte thyn, 1447; rede the, 2637; rede forby, 2539; reherce shal, 2489; rekene wolde, 2510; remembre that, 2204; reue no, 2693; saue myn, 437; shyne clere, 2224; besette can, 1069; sitte by, 1602; speke shamefast, 1535; s. with, 1989; strowe flouris, 101; suffere deth, 2098; take this, 1450; telle shal, 1161, 2221; translate that, 350; tuche but, 1693; vouche saf, 2273, 2490; walke 3ow, 979; w. two, 2067; warne 3oure, 438; wepe so, 2528; weue two, 2358; write which, 869; wyne tulle, 1435; w. myghte, 1436. — VII. *-e* in rhyme: acheue, 1614 f (: leue, *vivere*); ake, 704 f (: take *inf.*); amende, 2418 f (: brende 3 *s. pl. I.*); apeere, 210 f (: dere *adv.*); 83, 172, 186, 389, 456, 544, 730, 773, 908, 1336, 1472, 1570, 1633, 1802, 1835, 2005, 2134, 2151, 2183, 2226, 2338, 2696, etc., etc. — VIII. *-e* elided before vowels: see 145,

244, 387, 758, 848, 1799, 1802, 1959, 1989, 2046, 2212, 2265, 2488, 2594, etc., etc. — IX. *-e* elided before *h*: begile here (*their*), 780; charge hise, 483; chaunge hire, 1235; considere his, 394; deuoure hym, 1937; drawe his, 2437; encombre his, 2006; kepe his, 366, 370; k. hire, 2587; lete his, 1937; lese his, 2389; l. hire, 2595; ley hym, 1808; make hym, 2003; m. his, 2270, 2478; saue hire, 798; s. hym, 1936; s. his, 2001; synde hire, 1275; slake his, 2006; take here (*their*), 769; t. hise, 1112; taste hym, 1993; telle hire, 2218; turne hym, 1205; walke hym, 2439; wreke hym, 381; w. his, 1939; ȝeue hire, 2281. — X. Apocope of *-e*: berę ȝow, 2058; b. the, 2524; come to, 2276; bedotę this, 1547; etę||ther, 1931; getę the, 1595; forgetę the, 312; Iape || for, 1699; louę || for, 1187; make myn, 893; seruę ȝow, 2390; swerę to, 425; take the, 1482; wisschę to, 755; ȝeue credence, 81; ȝ. me, 892; ȝ. ȝow, 1320; ȝ. the, 2088. — XI. Hiatus: deyę as, 1322; dychę al, 708; fallę or, 593; lokę endelong, 144; rydę argonautycoun, \*1457; rehersę eft, 66; smytę of, 1817; turnę in, 2598; writę and, 1565; w. I, 2513; kepę hire, 1722; sekę helpe, 2432. — XII. *fle, sle*: flen away, 2020; fleen away, 941; fleen, 1309 f (: quien *n.*); fle, 643 f (: she), 1223 f (: meyne *n.*), 2112 f (: se, *inf.*). — slen thyn, 1807; slen hym, 2009; slen ȝoure, 2085; to slen me, 1821; to sle myn, 880; sle, 834 f (: Tisbe). — XIII. Gerundial infinitives: to done, 1597 f (: bone *n.* = prayer); to don the, \*358, what, 1113, this, \*1152, plesaunce, 1477, with, 1587, hem, 1476; to do me, 1181; cf. *inf.* don, 82, 374, 443, 478, 1088, 1268, etc.; do, 469 f, 1308 f, 2694 f, etc. — to gon to, 502; to gonę to, 1973; cf. *inf.*, gon be, 838, g. with, 966, 2097, g. lat, 1213, g. and, 2281, g. his, 2704; *inf.*, gon, 34 f, 764 f, 769 f, 781 f, 1213 f, 2264 f, 2367 f; go with, 899, g. to, 2622; go, 1091 f, 1634 f, 1775 f, 1831 f, 2013 f, 2066 f, 2283 f, 2415 f, 2720 f. — soth to seyne, 588; soth to seyne that, 715; sothly for to seyne she, 2354; to longe to wrytę and to sen, 1565 f (: serteyn *adv.*); what to seye, 2262 f (: to preye); cf. *inf.*, seyn the, 162, 1680, s. what, 469, s. myn, 2054, s. an, 285, s. alas, 756, s. If, 1020, s. al, 2392, s. hire, 1797; *inf.*, seye, 1180 f (: deye *inf.*), 2073 f (: deye *r s. pr. I.*); *inf.*, say, 2114 f (: day, *acc.*). — routhe it

was to sene, 1034 f (: queene), fayrere on to sene, 2425 f (: queen); to sen these, 48; to sen that, 106; fayn to sen this, 1138; gan . . . longe to sen hire, 2261; grace to beseke to sen hire, 2286; hire systyr for to se and, 2265; to se, 794 f, 1672 f, 2074 f, 2117 f; cf. *inf.*, sen sche, 492, s. now, 1450, s. me, 2301, s. of, 668, s. as, 1263; *inf.*, sen, 2537 f (: ben 3 *pl. pr. I.*); *inf.*, se, 520 f, 1011 f, 1427 f, 1710 f, 2113 f, 2560 f.

§ 120. The Present Participle ends in *L. G. W.* in *-ynge* (*-inge*), *-yng* (cf. Child, § 64; ten Brink, § 191). The regular spelling is *-ynge*; *-yng* occurs only once, *-inge* only three times. Final *-e* is, however, never pronounced in the interior of a line. There are only five examples of the participle in rhyme; twice with infinitives, three times with nouns in *-ynge*.

I. In rhyme with an infinitive: dwellynge, 718 f; wepynge, 1834 f. — II. In rhyme with nouns: fletynge, 2552 f; obeysynge, 1266 f; stondynge, 1332 f. — III. Before consonants: betynge, 863; daunsynge, 1106; feynynge, 932; hangynge, 218; imagynynge, 1410; lastynge, 39; lenynge, 234; leuyng, 2118; longynge, 1963; scherynge hokys, 641; schewynge, 266. — IV. Before vowels: comynge, 186; daunsynge, 200; cf. 47, 50, 283, 473, 685, 710, 854, 1204, 1470, 1500, 1669, 1760, 1962, 2018, 2196, 2378, 2405, 2702. — V. Before *h*: axynge hym, 1486; prey-synge hym, 1594; sittynge hath, 2377; slepyng he, 1326.

§ 121. The Perfect Participle of Weak Verbs ends in *L. G. W.* in *-ed*, *-ed*, *-d*, *-t* (cf. Child, § 62; ten Brink, §§ 163, 166-9, 176, 180-3).

Instead of *-ed*, our MS. often has *-yd*, *-id*; *-it* occurs in the following instances: acordit ful, 1635; acordit thus, 2027; acordit was, 2606; chargit by, 940; enbroudit was, 108; enbroudit with, 1199; weddit was, 1559; I-weddit be, 1179; weddit and, 2609; woundit sore, 2409; *-ist* occurs once (influenced by the ending of the following word), — thou reneyist hast, 314. After *-ed* an unauthorized final *-e* is often written (whether the participle be singular or plural), but of course is never pronounced. There are two examples of rhyme between participles

and preterites : beryed *pp.* 787 ( : heryed, 3 *pl. pt. I.*); seruyd *pp.*, 2384 ( : deseruyd 3 *s. pt. I.*). In the first example the participle is plural.

I. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the First Conjugation (cf. § 99).

abought, 1387, 2483 f ( : nought); aferyd, 2321; agast, 1534 f ( : shamefast); agilt, 453; beryed, 787 f ( : heryed 3 *pl. pt. I.*); brought, 2508 f ( : noght), 599, 904, 930, 1655, 1930, 2674, 2676; brough, 1045, 2361; I-brought, 1194 f ( : thought *n.*); braught, 1782 f ( : thought *n.*); browt, 2362 f; clothid, 146; clothede, 117, 174; I-clothede, 158; dight, 2611 f ( : bryght *adj.*); dreyed, 775; dreynkt, 293; drenchid, 2178; felt, 849; fulfild, 1340; ffulfyld, 56; hent, 2322; hid, 102 f ( : bed), 2504; herd, 1, 8, 106, 325, 1062, 1167, 1177, 2139, 2459; kept, 296, 1430; I-kept, 722; kid, 1028; kyst, 1337; laft, 1260, 1330, 65 f ( : eft); layd, 2516 f, 102; I-leyd, 2141 f; led, 1108, 1111; lad, 62, 2144, 2718; lerid, 1153 f; rent, 2417, 2613; sent, 584, 1129, 2555; I-sent, 1124; set, 522, 1637, 1939; sette, 2499; spent, 1125 f; steerid, 935 f; stynted, 1647; taught, 1646; told, 1161, 1233; I-told, 1592; went, 1651 f ( : encha[n]tement); wrought, 2014 f, 2187 f, 2228 f, 2363 f, 2642 f, 2607; I-wrought, 1173 f; I-wrouht, 351 f. (Rhyme words. — thought *n.* (351, 1173, 2014, 2228), nought (2187, 2642), browt *pp.* (2363)).

II. Old Norse verbs of the First (Noreen's Third) Conjugation (cf. § 100).

brend, 292; reysed, 1163; areysid, 1525 f.

III. Verbs of uncertain origin (cf. § 100).

achoked, 2008; agrotyed (*three syll.*), 2454; bostid, 1262; cut, 292, cuttē, 973 (other MSS. *kuttid*); put, 451, 1411, 1413, \*1613.

IV. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Second Conjugation (together with a few words from Old Norse) (cf. § 101).

blyssede, 131; I-brydeled, 1114; callid, 1425, 2570; callyd, 724; cost, 1950; clepid, 964, 1004, 1590, 1689, 2563; I-clepid, 944, † \*1591; fetēred, 2722; fetērid, 1950; I-fyred, 1013 f; forpynnyd, 2428 f; fortheryd, 399; frettid, 1117; huntid, 981; lernede, 2350; I-louyd, †1246, 2115; mad, 264, 420, 540, 669, 1146, 2302;



makyd, 448, 1432; makid, \*403; I-makyd, 154; I-makede, 110; reft, 2325; I-raft, 1572; beraft, 2590 f (: craft); stekid, 161; warnede, 2658; warned, 2710; weddid, 2246; weddit, 1559, 2100; weddit, 2609; weddede, 1331; I-weddit, 1179; wonid, 2353; woundit, 2409.

V. Verbs of Germanic origin which are not found in Anglo-Saxon (cf. § 101).

awhapid, 2321 f; awapid, 120 f, 814 f; hust, 2682; I-kneled, 1232; krynkēled, 2012; romed, 90; romyd, 1589; shrewede, 1545; I-swounyd, 1342; I-tukkid, 982; I-wymplid, 797.

VI. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Conjugation (cf. § 102).

lyuyd, 1284. — said, 67 f; sayd, 2140 f, 2517; sayed, 767 f; seyde, 8, 69, 268, 269, 2072, 2639, 2662, 2723; seyde, 1167 f (: breyde *n.*).

VII. Weak participles from strong verbs (cf. § 103).

deyed, 1677; adrad, 300; fled, 664, 1279; lost, 1159, 1361, 1779; walkid, 978; wept, 2077.

VIII. Syncopated participles from verbs of Romance origin (cf. § 104).

caught, 2451, 2722; còrounēd, 174; I-còrounēde, 151; I-còronēd, 520; coueryd, 762; espied, cf. IX.; hurt, 1353; quit, 511; quyt, 1992; sekerēde, 2128; cf. betrayed, suffered, IX, below.

IX. Unsyncopated participles from verbs of Romance origin (cf. § 105).

acordit, 1635, 2027, 2606; acused, 338 f; affermyd, 790; apayed, 68 f, 766 f; apiered, 934 f; aprouede, 21; arayed, 1207; aryuyd, 1049; astonedē, 164; begylede, 2547; beseged, 1694; betrayed, 125, 1390 f, 2532 f (but also betrayed, 2188); betrayed, 1658; bytrised, 2541; I-broudede, 159; enbroudit, 108, 1199 (cf. ten Brink, § 140); caryed (2 *syll.*), 2451; chargit, 940; clothede (= closed), 94; compàssid, 1543; compleynynd, 1748 f; compleynede, 1344; compounned, 2585; conseyuēde, 1746; considered, 157; contrefetid, 1376; countyrpletyd, 466; dampned, 1953; depeyntid, 1025; deseruyd, 490; destroyed, 2404;

destroyed, 121, 1026, 1415, 1419; desyred, 1012 f; deuoured, 1976; deuouryd, 1947; disclaundryd, 1031; diserityd, 1065; enamoured, 1610; enbosed, 1200; enfamȳnyd, 2429 f; enquiryd, 1152 f; enhaunsede, 1411; -e, \*372; escapid, 818, 2320 f; skapid, 119 f; espied, 219; espyed, 809; excusid, 339; farcedē, 1373; feynede, 1257, 1374, 2529; feynynd, 1749 f; I-feynynd, 327 f; formed, 1071; I-formed, 975; greuyd, 115 f; agreuyd, 321 f; honoured, 372; meuid, 320 f; I-offeredē, 932; partid, 1110; passed, 89; payed, 1391 f, 1125; performed, \*2138; peyntid, 1029, 2538; pilid, 1262; pleynyd, 326 f; prayed, 2533 f; presentid, 1297 f; preysid, 1225 f, 524; receyuyd, 2211; rehersid, 1464; releuyd, 116 f; remembred, 2717; reneyist, 314; repeyrid, 1136; repressid, 2591; refreschedē, 1081; sauyd, 2130; †savede, 1648; seruyd, 2384 f (: deseruyd, 3 s. *pt. I.*), 398, 2365; sparyd, 2602; sufferēd (or suffered), 1510; tormentid, 1296 f; translated, 255, 413; turnedē, 500; wastid, 2678.

X. I-benchede, 98, is derived from the noun *benche*.

§ 122. The Perfect Participle of Anglo-Saxon Strong Verbs ends in *L. G. W.* in -*yn* (-*en*), -*yn* (-*en*), -*n*, -*e* (cf. Child, § 61; ten Brink, §§ 130, 132, 139, 140, 142, 143, 145, 148—151, 153, 155—158, 160). For weak participles from verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon, cf. § 121, VII.

I. -*yn* (-*en*, -*n*), in rhyme.

bityn, 2318 f (: smetyn *pp.*); born, 313 f (: corn *n.*), 658 f (: lorn *pp.*), 833 f (: torn *pp.*), 2578 f (: corn *n.*); dreuyn, 1924 f (: ȝeuyn *inf.*); I-drevyn, 2430 f (: ȝeuyn *pp.*); to-dryuyn, 1280 f (: ȝeuyn *pp.*); getyn, 1753 f (: forgetyn *pp.*); I-leyn, 2410 f (: reyn *n.*); lorn, 659 f (: born *pp.*); forlorn, 2663 f (: sworn *pp.*); seyn, 1271 f (: ageyn *adv.*); slayn, 2149 f, 2192 f (: ageyn *adv.*); smetyn, 2319 f (: bityn *pp.*); sworn, 2662 f (: forlorn *pp.*); I-sworn, 368 f (: biforn); forsworn, 927 f, 1259 f, 2455 f (: by-forn); sworn, 2102 f (: torn *pp.*); torn, 832 f (: born *pp.*), 2103 f (: sworn *pp.*); wrytyn, 8 f (: wytyn *inf.*); ȝeuyn, 1281 f (: to-dryuyn *pp.*), 2431 f (: I-drevyn *pp.*).

II. Unsyncopated -*yn* (-*en*).

bodyn, 346; boundyn, 600; brokyn, 852, 1487; brostyn, 1300,

2416; comyn, 45, 856, 1580; fallyn, 590, 1946; foundyn, 744; fretyn, 1951; getyn, 1402, 2150; fforgetyn, 113; holdyn, 479, 1009, 1709; holpyn, 1984, 2222; latyn, 531; I-loryn, 26; lorn (*but* *l.* loryn), 1048; ropyn, 62; shapyn, 2014, 2581, 2629; I-songyn, 224; spokyn, 232, 919; sprongyn, 1054; sworyn, 2465; I-wouyn, 2360; writyn, 530; 3euyn, 20; 3euen, 489.

### III. Syncopated -yn.

born, 1027, 1308, 2568; I-born, 2577; holpyn and, 451; seyn, 11, 2076; slayn, 836, 837, \*840, 1927; sworn, 1304, 1320, 2476.

### IV. -e in rhyme.

I-bake, 709 f (: make *inf.*); begunne, 80 f (: tunne *n.*); bygunne, 1007 f (: sunne *n.*); I-bete, 775 f (: threte *inf.*), 1122 f (: gete *pp.*); blowe, 1383 f (: knowe *pp.*); ouerblowe, 1287 f (: thirowe *n.*); bore, 2234 f (: forswore *pp.*); come, 823 f, 1019 f, 1776 f, 2018 f; I-come, 2342 f; ouercome, 2019 f (rhyme words, — nome *pp.* (823, 1019, 1776), I-nome *pp.* (2342)); fare, 2209 f (: care *n.*); founde, 862 f (: on the grounde); I-founde, 1668 f (: on the grounde); gete, 1123 f (: I-bete *pp.*); I-graue, 98 f (: haue, *r s. pr. l.*); knowe, 1382 f (: blowe *pp.*); nome, 822 f, 1018 f, 1776 f; I-nome, 2343 f (all rhyme with (I-)come *pp.*); I-ronne, 1943 f (: wonne *pp.*); to-shake, 962 f (: take *pp.*), 1765 f (: I-take *pp.*); shoue, 1381 f (: loue *n.*); I-shoue, 726 f (: loue *n.*); withstande, 1186 f (: wande, *inf.*); I-swore, 1285 f (: more *adv.*); forswore, 2235 f (: bore *pp.*), 2522 f (: therfore *adv.*); take, 963 f (: to-shake *pp.*), 2137 f (: make *inf.*); I-take, 1142 f (: make *inf.*), 1764 f (: to-shake *pp.*); atake, 2182 f (: awake *inf.*); vndyrtake, 71 f (: make *inf.*); wonne, 2564 f (: cunne *pl. pr. l.*), 1942 f (: I-ronne *pp.*); I-wunne, 2427 f (: sunne *n.*); wrye, 1201 f (: hye *adj.*); I-wronge, 2527 f (: tunge *n.*); 3eue, 1538 f (: leue *vivere*).

### V. -ē before consonants.

come for, 1495; drawe shortly (*l.* I-drawe), 1785; graue was, 788; knowe lite, 409; witholde 3it, 76; shape for, 2692; ytake swich, 617; wrete manye, 348.

VI. Apocope of *-e*.

come to, 1102; come || the, 2622; holde to, 1447; swore so, 1234.

VII. Elision of *-e* before vowels.

blowe, 1365, 1475; cloue, 738; come, 1015, 1712; forsake, 799; founde, 8; I-founde, 1212; graue, 785; kerue, 2695; vnknowe, 2034; stole, 2154.

VIII. Elision before *h*.

dronke hire, 817; founde here (= their), 1060.

## § 123. Preteritive Presents.

The development of these verbs is, in the main, entirely regular.

A few new forms deserve mention: *owith* (3 s. pr. I.), *wit*, *wist* (1 and 2 s. pr. I.), *mayst* (2 s. pr. I.). Beside the older form *couthē* (3 s. pt. I.), which occurs once, appears the new form *coude*; beside *wiste* (3 s. pt. I.), appears *woste*, but the only time it occurs in rhyme it seems to be a mere variant in spelling. The forms *may*, *s(c)hal*, have come to be used also as plurals. This is, of course, not the place to discuss the development of meaning in *oughte* and *muste*.

A.S. witan, nyan. — 1 and 3 s. pr. I., wot, 14, 61, 261, 273, 402, 461, 1359, 1623, 2108, 2512, 2520, 2651; wit, 4, 2660; not, 77, 401, 1227, 1272, 1967. — 2 s. pr. I., wostow, 487; wist, 533. — Pl. pr. I., wete, 263, 1998; wel wot men, 1801, is of course not plural. — 1 and 3 s. pt. I., wiste, 2386 f (: leste, *imp. pr. S.*); wiste what, 140; wiste nat, 853; woste, 1245 f (: leste *imp. pt. I.*); woste wel, 1753; nyste what, 345, 2262. — Pl. pt. I., wiste it, 2116. — *Pp.*, onwist, 1653.

A.S. ágan. — 3 s. pr. I. (*imp.*), owith, 360. — 3 s. pt. I. (= ought), oughte be(n), 383, 2531; oughte herof, 2134; ought a, 393; aughte kepe, 536; (= owed), oughte a, 1609; aughte a, 589; (*imp.*), oughte ben, 339; oughte nat, 357; ouuhte now, 419; ouhte, 27; aughte to, 396. — 2 s. pt. I. (= ought), aughtist, 1957. — Pl. pt. I. (= ought), oughte we, 766; aughte rather, 458.

A.S. cunnan. — Inf., cunne, 2044. — 1 and 3 s. pr. I., can, 162, 319, 742, 921, etc. — Pl. pr. I., cunne, 2565 f (: wonne *pp.*). — 1 and 3 s. pt. I., couthe, 2351 f (: 3oughte = youth); coude

- (+ *cons.*), 303, 869 (*Subj. I.*), 1002, 1570, 2356, 2357, 2415; coude, 59, 663, 674, 947 (*Subj. I.*), 1182, 1607, 2418, 2449, 2470; coude she, 2358. — *Pl. pt. I.*, coude 3e, 2528.
- A.S. durran. — *1 and 3 s. pr. I.*, dar, 285, 1995, 2216, 2594; dare, 923. — *2 s. pr. I.*, daryst, 1450. — *3 s. pr. S.*, dare, 2024. — *3 s. pt. I.*, durste, 347. — *Pl. pt. I.*, durste so, 749. — *1 s. pt. S.*, durste seyn, 2054.
- A.S. sculan. — *1 and 3 s. pr. I.*, schal, 149, 202, 316, 322, 374, etc.; shal, 1941 f (: thral *n.*), 1089, 2114, 2214, 2276, 2489, 2599. Instead of *schal*, 1065, *schulde* would be expected. — *2 s. pr. I.*, schalt, 316; shalt, 1810, 1811, 2642; schat, 469, 848, 898; shat, 2212. — *Pl. pr. I.*, shul (+ *cons.*), 2003, 2661; schal, 12, 184, 302, 364, 1088, 1386; shal, 1710, 2391, 2627. — *1 and 3 s. pt. I. (and S.)*, schulde, 2511 f (: wolde, *2 pl. pt. S.*), 321, 1134, 1489, 1520, 1542, 2001; shulde, 1640, 1951, 2595; schulde, 835, 1000, 1042; shulde, 2203, 2332; sholde, 2025; schulde thyn, 532; -e slake, 619; schule lastyn, 1003; schude, 1180. — *2 s. pt. I.*, sholdist, 1820. — *Pl. pt. I. (and S.)*, schulde, 10, 99, 177, 298; schulde, 83; shude, 1537; shulde 3e, 2059; -e the, 2113.
- A.S. mukan. — *1 and 3 s. pr. I.*, may, 7, 9, 15, 24, 64, etc. — *2 s. pr. I.*, mayst, 253, 308, 492; maystow, 1952. — *Pl. pr. I.*, may, 478, 621, 668, 922, 1085, 1263, 1979, 2223, 2389, 2402, 2537, 2539, 2560; ma, 520; my, 2396; for *may*, 1427, read *myghte*. — *1 and 3 s. pt. I.*, myghte, 679, 795, 825, 935, 1410, 1415, 1442, 1443, 2056, 2110, 2192, 2412, 2433, 2720; myzte, 170; myghe, 1539; myghte, 165, 656, 729, 1011, 1215, 1282, 1349, 1399, 1633, 2338; myghe, 2437; myght it, 732; myghte, 897, 1073, 1413; myght she, 1835; myghte, 2275, is a mistake for *but*. — *2 S. pt. I.*, myghtist, 1444; myghtyst, 985. — *Pl. pt. I.*, myghtyn, 761; myghte nat, 730; -e turne, 1205; -e smyte, 1817; myght, 653 f (: to the flyght).
- A.S. \*mótan. — *1 and 3 s. pr. I.*, mot, 2097, 2498, 2581; mote, 1680; mote syndyn, 1945; ††mote, 337. — *Pl. pr. I.*, motyn, 17, 319, 903; mote 3e, 2551; mot hym, 1925. — *1 and 3 s. pr. S.*, mote falle, 2064; -e go, 2066; mote, 843, 844, 2068, 2104; mot be, 2534; mot nedis, 2698. — *1 and 3 s. pt. I.*, must[ë] (*as*

*present*), 359; (*as pret.*), *muste*, 933, 1935, *muste*, 1081, 1934, 2168, 2472, 2697. — *1 and 3 s. pt. S.*, *muste*, 1436, 1573, 1574, 1632; *must[ë]*, 2266; *muste*, 2264; *muste don*, 1594.<sup>1</sup>

§ 124. Anomalous Verbs : *be, will, nill, do, go, have.*

*be.* — *Inf.* *been*, 321, 392; *ben*, 68, 338, 354, 383, 683, 694, 787, 800, 911, 1627, 1947, 1975, 2081, 2387; *be*, 132, 290, 303, 1145, 2104; *bien*, 2433 f (: *quien n.*); *be*, 110 f, 466 f, 480 f, 532 f, 1074, 1170, etc. — *1 s. pr. Ind.*, *am*, 64, 836, etc.; *ne am (contracted)*, 989. — *2 s. pr. I.*, *art*, 246, 248, 986, etc. — *3 s. pr. I.*, *is*, 2, 14, 28, 33, 41, etc.; *ne is (contracted)*, 5, 326; *nis*, 954; *nys*, 78, 259, 1043, 1999, 2094; *is (l. nis)*, 2636. — *Pl. pr. Ind.*, *been*, 1031, 1194, 1531; *ben*, 18, 119, 373, 421, 722, 782, 1051, 1259, 1518, 1569, 1612, 2027, 2090, 2251, 2455, 2544; *ben*, 992 f (: *queen*), 2536 f (: *sen inf.*); *be*, 763, 1086, 1712, 2127, 2191, 2524; *be*, 517 f (: *sche*), 1512 f (: *renone n.*). — *1 s. pr. S.*, *be*, 1616 f (: *sche*). — *2 s. pr. S.*, *be*, 987, 2538, 2644. — *3 s. pr. S.*, *be*, 3, 29, 35, 131, 219, 375, 389, 487, 497, 667, 842, 856, 987, 1020, 1145, 1464, 2002, 2180, 2393, 2495, 2548, 2601, 2652, 2655, 2675, 2703, 2705; *be*, 922 f (: *he*), 1554 f (: *he*). — *Pl. pr. S.*, *be*, 925, 371 f, 450 f, 1494 f. — *Pl. Imperative*, *be*, 2559; *beth*, 397. — *1 and 3 s. pt. Ind.*, *was*, 80, 89, etc., etc.; *nas*, 741, 1114, 1407, 1749. — *Pl. pt. Ind.*, *weryn*, 1030; *weren*, 767, 2562; *were they*, 288; *w. hethene*, 299; *w. trewe*, 475; *w. dwellyng*, 710; *w. childeryn*, 901; *were*, 711, 973, 1695; *were the*, 152; *w. goode*, 272; *w. brend*, 292; *w. so*, 300; *w. neigheboris*, 720; *w. half*, 1697; *w. bretheryn*, 2601; *nerz out*, 686. — For the *Subjunctive*, see § 110. — *Pp.*, *been*, 1282 f (: *quien*), 181, 879; *ben*, 729, 1024, 1261; *be*, 840 f (: *3e*), 2120 f (: *me*), 2443 f (: *he*), 182; *I-be*, 6 f (: *cuntre*), 192 f (: *possibilite*), 1676 f (: *the pr.*).

*will.* — *1 s. pr. Ind.*, *wole*, 469; *wele*, 622; *wele hym*, 860; *wele that*, 542; *w. lete*, 623; *w. fulfille*, 694; *w. the*, 894; *w. myn*,

<sup>1</sup> No reliance can be placed upon the indications of mood given for the auxiliary verbs in this section. Accuracy is perhaps unattainable; it has not even been consistently sought. In only a few instances forms have been marked as Subjunctives; usually no distinction has been attempted.

1448; w. but, 1692; w. turne, 2181; w. no, 2225; w. bothe, 2277; w. 3ow, 2349; w. be, 2660; wil nat, 2032; nele quod, 2653. — 2 *s. pr. Ind.*, wilt, 1805; wit, 1449; nylt, 758. — 3 *s. pr. Ind.*, wele, 834, 1187; wele have, 1393; wele deuise, 291; w. nat, 466, 629; w. for, 704; w. telle, 1458; w. this, 1614; w. the, 1767; w. beholde, 2242; wil haue, 2293; wil loue, 1187; nyl the, 1214. — *Pl. pr. Ind.*, wole, ‡289; wele, ‡768; wele nat, 68, 1307; w. deye, 667; w. 3e, 1284, 1303, 1305; w. me, 1318, 1319; nyl don, 2095. — 1 *s. pr. S.*, wele, ‡2107; wele saue, 437. — 3 *s. pr. S.*, wil nat, 2388. — *Pl. pr. S.*, wele, 429, 2106; wele deuyse, 427; w. rede, 1557. — 1 and 3 *s. pt. Ind.*, wolde nat, 2476; wolde, \*594; wolde his, 952; w. he, 1273; w. hym, 1931; wolde no, 671; w. this, 1191. — 2 *s. pt. Ind.*, woldist, 1378; noldist, 268, 530. — *Pl. pt. Ind.*, woldyn, 293, 769; wolde they, 753; w. threte, 754; wolde they, 756. — For *Subjunctive* see § 110. — *Pp.*, wold, 1209 f (: gold).

do. — *Inf.*, see § 119, XIII. — 2 *s. pr. Ind.*, dost, 241. — 3 *s. pr. Ind.*, doth, 382, 441, etc.; both (*for* doth), 172. — *Pl. pr. Ind.*, don, 477, 1167, 1622, 2049. — *Sing. pr. S.*, do, 2293 f (: so), 442, 1076, 2641. — *Pl. pr. S.*, don, 2100; do, 1988. — 2 *pl. Imper.*, doth, 439. — 1 and 3 *s. pt. Ind.*, dide hym, 1408; d. his, 2464; dide there, 1701; dede, 139; dede hem, 122, 1516; d. his, 1486; d. hire, 2574, 2715; fordede hyre self, 2557. — *Pl. pt. Ind.*, dedyn, 136, 2441; dede hym, 1061. — *Pl. pt. S.*, dedyn, 723. — *Pp.*, don, 266, 349, 453, 821, 879, 889, 1261, 1822, 1823, 2324, 2469, 2541; do, 957 f (: Dido); fordon, 939.

go. — *Inf.*, see § 119, XIII. — 1 *s. pr. Ind.*, go, 2097 f (: so). — 2 *s. pr. Ind.*, gost, 926. — 3 *s. pr. Ind.*, goth, 337, 635, etc. — *Pl. pr. Ind.*, gon, 1716 f (: non *pr. adj.*), 649, 968; go, 2539 f (: also). — *Pl. pr. S.*, go, 1710. — 2 *s. Imper.*, go, 444, 485; goth (*for* go), 2671. — *Present plc.*, goinge, 1669. — *Pp.*, gon, 1456 f, 1653 f, 2016 f, 2463 f, 94, \*417, 792, 1826, 1948, 2719; go, 1656 f, 2656 f; agon, 433 f, 1110 f; ago, 13 f, 1797 f, 2241 f, 2359 f; I-gon, 1243 f, 2206 f, 2213 f; I-go, 916 f, 1193 f, 1481 f; begon (*in* wo begon), 1487 f, 2409 f, 2497 f. Rhyme words. — anon (433, 1110, 1243, 1487, 2016), Argonautycoun (1456), Demophon (2463, 2497), on *num.* (2213, 2409), ston *n.* (2206),

won *n.* (1653); also (1481, 2241), fro *adv.* (2359), two *num.* (1656, 2656), mo *adj.* (916), so (13), therto (1797), wo *n.* (1193). have. — *Inf.*, hauyn hire, 698; h. in, 1366; han, 251, 332, 353, 376, 385, 530, 587, 594, 1247, 2048, 2275; haue, 453; haue hire, 2293; haue the, 419; h. no, 663; h. non, 2393, 2653; h. sum, 1567; a, 268, 729, 1048, 2077. — 1 *s. pr. Ind.*, haue, 1, 40, 44, 617, 659, 2115; haue hem, 31; h. herd, 1167; haue to, 512; h. 3ow, 836; h. told, 1161; h. sayd, 2140, 2662; h. prayed, 2533; h. sworn, 2662; ne haue nat, 71. — 2 *s. pr. Ind.*, hast, 215, 255, etc. — 3 *s. pr. Ind.*, hath, 6, 8, 348, etc.; ne hath, 340, 1260; hath(e), 1777, 2019; hat ende, 651; h. so, 793; h. brought, 1655; h. kept, 2159; h. he, 2324; h. this, 2158; h. the, 2508 (a late *h* added to *hat*). — *Pl. pr. Ind.*, hauyn a, 2091; haue 3e, 1177, 1257; han, 11, 61, 65, 67, etc. — *Sing. pr. S.*, have, 1992 f (: saue *inf.*); haue, 493; haue he, 1393; h. herd, 325; haue do, 957. — *Imper.*, see § 115, III. — *Pt. Ind. and S.*, see §§ 102, 113, 114

#### ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS.

*A. R.*, Ancren Riwe; *B.-S.* or *S.-B.*, Bradley's Stratmann; *B.-T.*, Bosworth-Toller; *Bright*, Bright, A.-S. Reader; *Freudenberger*, M. Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucers heroischem Verse, 1889; *G. and E.*, Genesis and Exodus; *L.*, Layamon (both texts); *L<sup>a</sup>.*, Layamon, A-text; *L<sup>b</sup>.*, Layamon, B-text; *Lchd.*, Cockayne, Leechdoms, etc.; *M. L. N.*, Mod. Lang. Notes; *O.*, Ormulum; *O. & N.*, Owl and Nightingale; *Plummer*, Plummer, Two Saxon Chron. Parallel; *P. Pl.*, Piers Plowman; *Sheldon*, E. S. Sheldon's etymologies in Webster's International Dictionary; *Skeat*, Skeat, Etym. Dict., and ed. of the Legend; *Sweet*, Sweet, Hist. of Eng. Sounds, 1888, and A.-S. Reader. — Such common abbreviations as *n.* (noun, or neuter), *imp.* (impersonal), *Inv.* or *Imper.* (Imperative), will readily be understood. It is to be noted, however, that *adj.* means *adjective, singular, attributive*, unless *post.* (= postpositive) or *pred.* (= in the predicate) be added; but sometimes when the adjective is invariable this distinction has not been made.

The following signs are used: -ë or -e = *e* pronounced; -e = *e* elided before a vowel or *h*; ę = *e* apocopated or syncopated; (e) indicates a letter wrongly written in the MS.; [e] indicates a letter omitted in the MSS.; ˘ marks an accented syllable; \* denotes a line metrically imperfect; † denotes that the sense is imperfect; ‡ denotes a questionable or incorrect reading; || marks the caesura.

The manuscripts are denoted as follows: *Aq.*, Additional MS. 9,832, British



Museum ; *A12*, Additional MS. 12,524, British Museum ; *A28*, Additional MS. 28,617, British Museum ; *B*, Bodley MS. 638, Bodleian Library ; *F*, MS. Ff. 1.6, University Library, Cambridge ; *Fx*, Fairfax MS. 16, Bodleian Library ; *G*, MS. Gg. 4.27, Cambridge University ; *P*, Pepys MS. 2006, Magdalen College, Cambridge ; *R*, Rawlinson MS. C. 86, Bodleian Library ; *S*, MS. Arch. Seld. B. 24, Bodleian Library ; *Tn*, Tanner MS. 346, Bodleian Library ; *Tr*, MS. R. 3, 19, Trinity College, Cambridge ; *Th*, W. Thynne's edition, 1532. — *L. G. W.* = MS. Gg. 4.27, Cambridge University, of the Legend of Good Women.

JOHN M. MANLY.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13











1.





A FINE IS INCURRED IF THIS BOOK IS  
NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON  
OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED  
BELOW.

422 7860

SEP 14 1973 H

STALLS

CHARGE

CANCELLED

0973 485.4

OCT 19 1973 H

422 7651

NOV 9 1973 H

12422.12.10  
Observation on the language of Chau  
Widener Library 003329831



3 2044 086 720 745